

BENICOVSKI  
—  
MEMOIRS  
AND TRAVELS

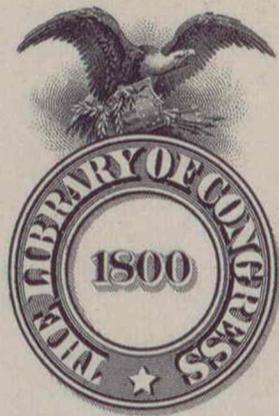
2

DK  
754  
B47



DUBLIN 1790



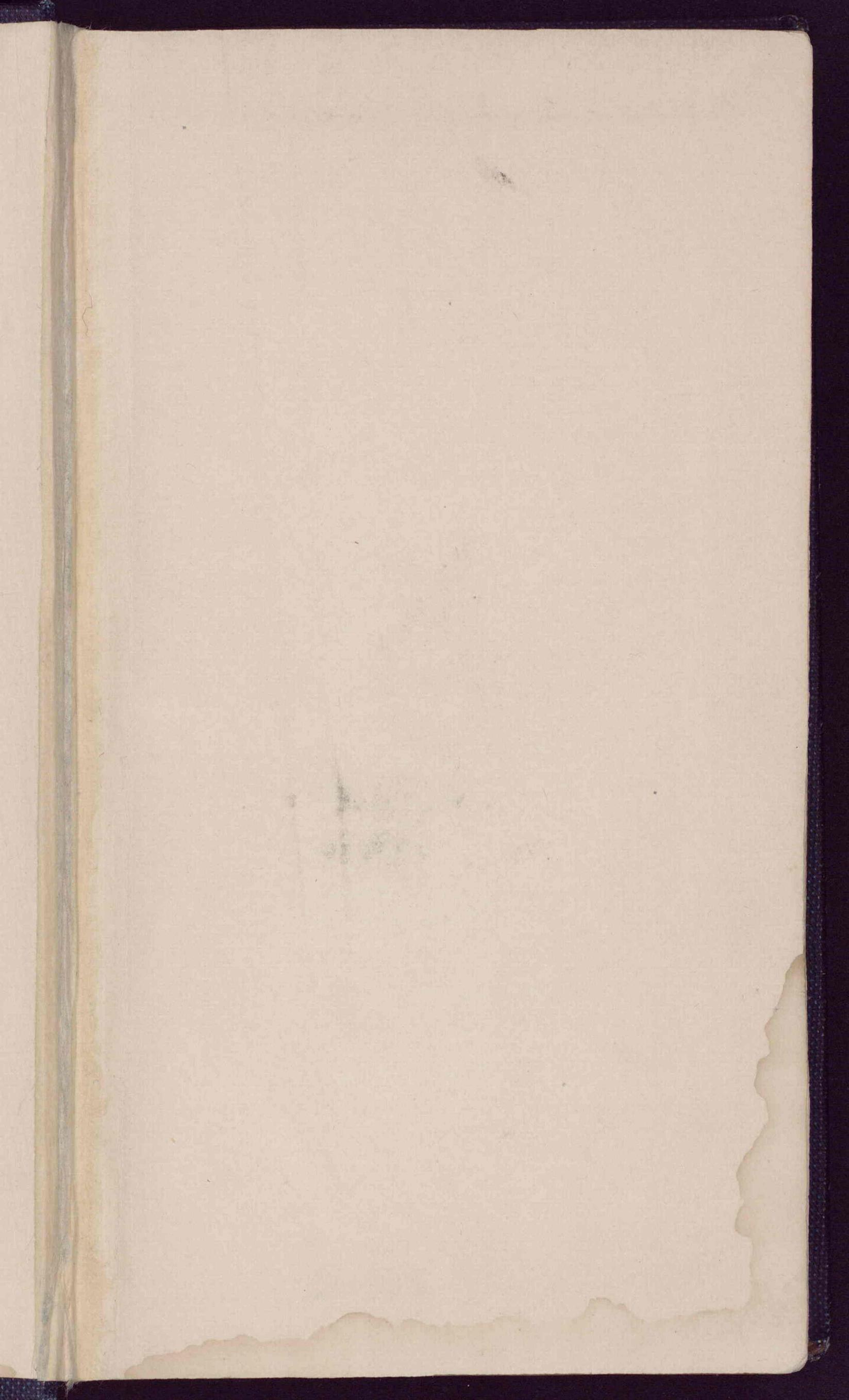


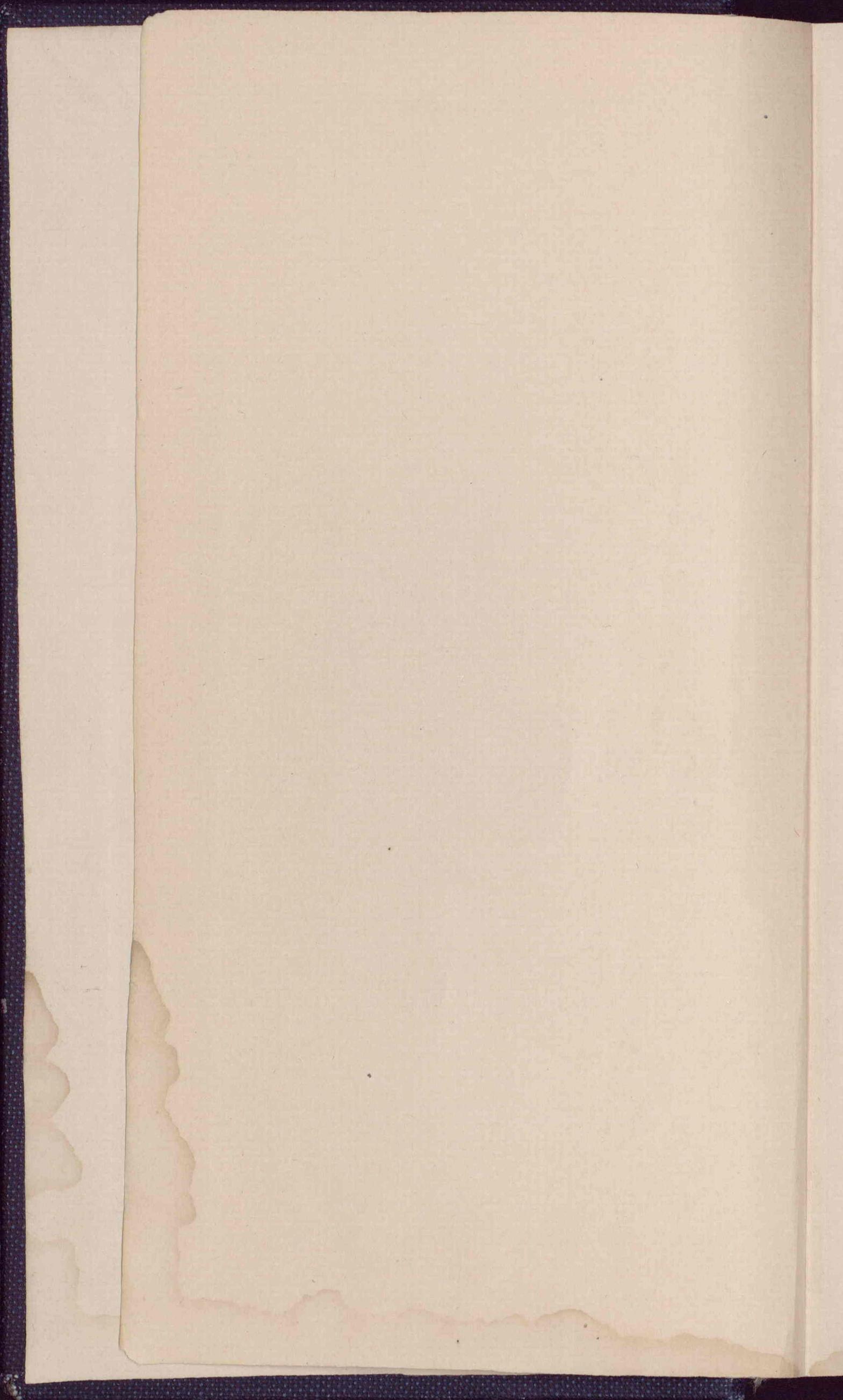
Class

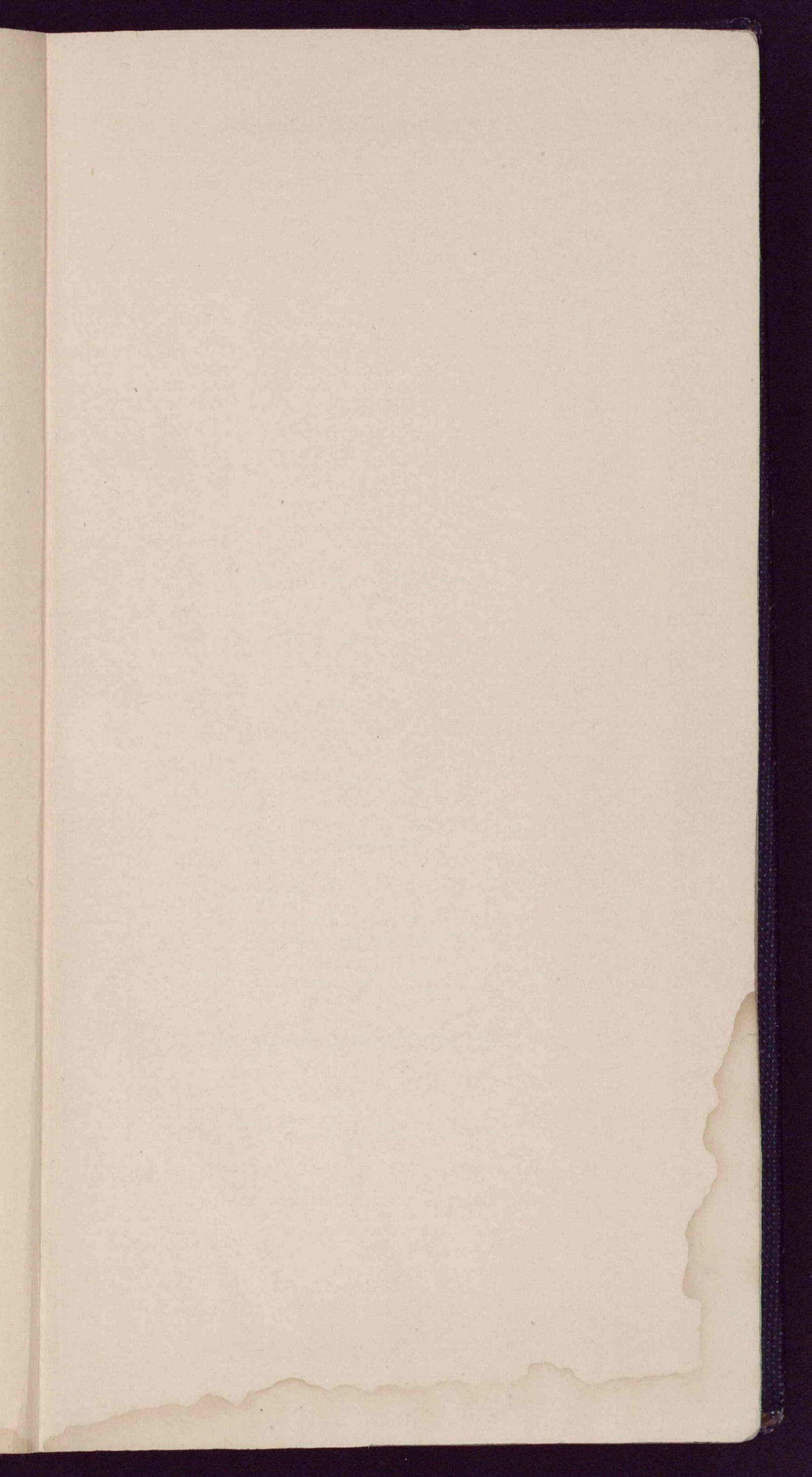
DK754

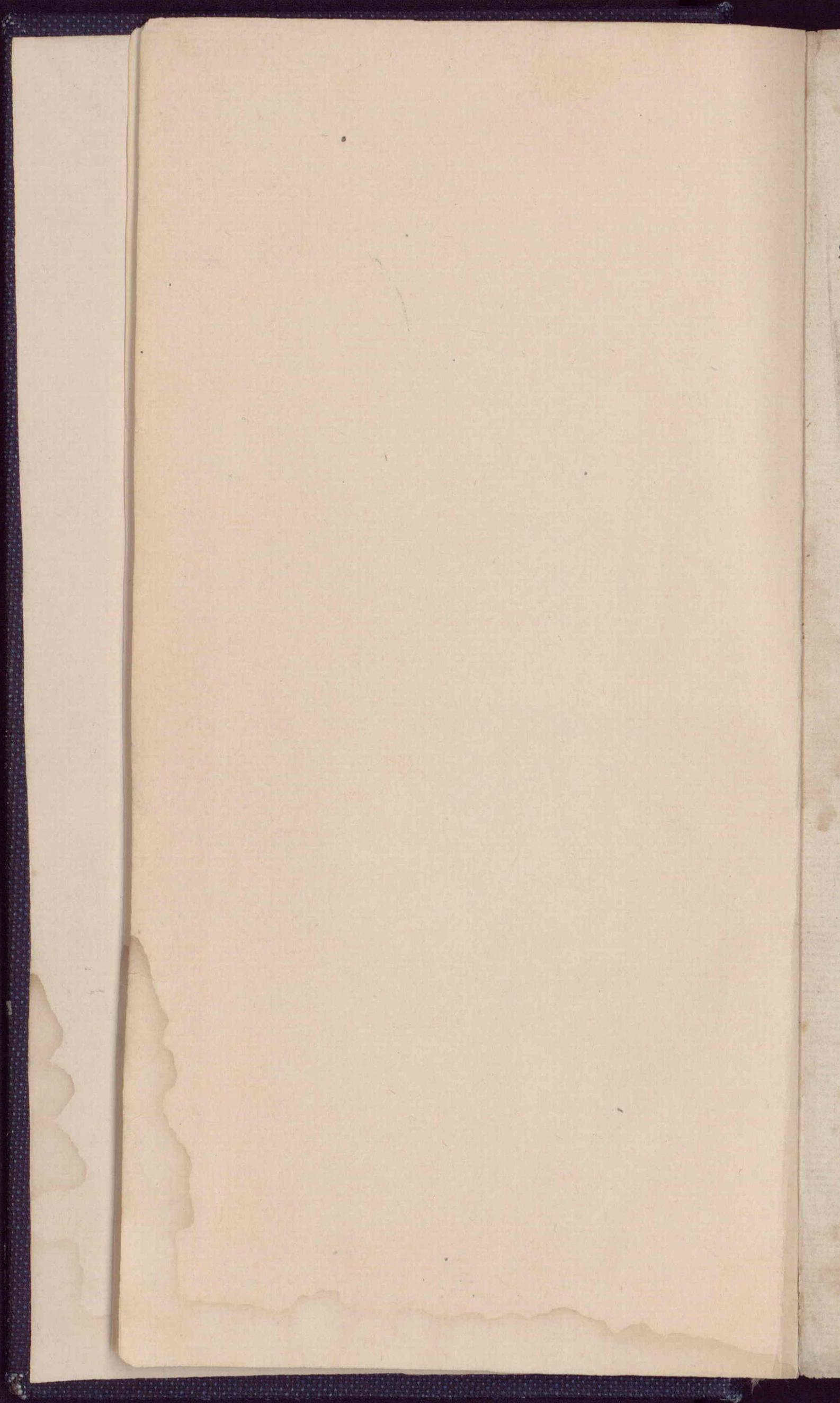
Book

.B47









2

# MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS

OF

*Maurice August*  
Maurice August Count de Benpowsky;

MANATE OF THE KINGDOMS OF HUNGARY  
AND POLAND, ONE OF THE CHIEFS OF THE  
CONFEDERATION OF POLAND, &c. &c. 331

CONSISTING OF HIS MILITARY OPERATIONS IN POLAND, HIS EXILE INTO  
KAMCKATH, HIS ESCAPE AND VOYAGE FROM THAT PENINSULA  
THROUGH THE NORTHERN PACIFIC OCEAN, TOUCHING AT  
JAPAN AND FORMOSA, TO CANTON IN CHINA, WITH  
A ACCOUNT OF THE FRENCH SETTLEMENT HE  
WAS APPOINTED TO FORM UPON THE  
ISLAND OF MADAGASCAR.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

TRANSLATED FROM THE

ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT.

*William Nicholson.*

IN TWO VOLUMES.

V O L. II.



---

D U B L I N:

PRINTED BY ZACHARIAH JACKSON,

FOR P. WOGAN, L. WHITE, P. BYRNE, J. MOORE, C. LEWIS,  
GRUEBER & M'ALLISTER, G. DRAPER, W. JONES,  
AND R. WHITE.

1790.

DK 754

B 47

ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT

THE HISTORY OF THE  
REIGN OF CHARLES THE FIRST  
BY JOHN BURNET  
BISHOP OF SALISBURY

WATSON'S HISTORY

ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT

THE HISTORY OF

VOL. II

D. D. P. I. M.

Printed by R. Clarendon, in the Strand, near St. Dunstons Church

1700

---

---

# C O N T E N T S

OF THE

## SECOND VOLUME.

---

*A Memoir concerning the expedition to Madagascar, for the formation of a Royal establishment on that island; the execution and chief command of which were entrusted by his Majesty to the Count de Benyowsky, Proprietary Colonel of a corps of volunteers, in 1772.*

page 87

*A full account of particulars relating to the Royal establishment at Madagascar, entrusted to M. the Count de Benyowsky: from his arrival on the 14th of February, 1774.*

107

Pieces

C O N T E N T .

<i>Pieces referred to in the Memoirs.</i>	263
<i>Observations upon the disorders of thisland of Madagascar.</i>	318
<i>Supplement to serve as a sequel to the Memoirs concerning Madagascar.</i>	331
<i>Copies of the Ministerial letters of France, of the oath of the Madagascar nation to the Count de Benyowsky: his election to the dignity of Ampansacabe, his full powers to treat in Europe, his declaration made in England, and his proposals to the English Government.</i>	341



stood in the Japanese language, by means of Mr. Boscarew, whom I ordered to be called. All our efforts, however, were entirely useless. They only shook their heads, as a sign that they did not understand us: but one of them presented a paper to us, on which I perceived some Latin letters, I received it with avidity, and it was with great pleasure that I read its contents in the Latin language to the following purport.

“THE Health of our Lord Jesus to the Reader.”

“In the year 1749, on the 24th of May, I arrived in this island, with three other companions of the society of Jesus, and being hospitably received by the inhabitants, I fixed my abode here to propagate the word of God. The chiefs of this island speak the Mandarin language, and have shewn the most ardent desire to be instructed in the Catholic Religion, which is the only good and satisfactory worship. Their zeal proceeded so far as to induce them to assist me in the laborious charge of propagating the faith, and by the miraculous assistance of the holy patron of the company of Jesus, I had the satisfaction of seeing two hundred and sixty Neophytes baptised the first year, whose zeal, constancy, and patience have confirmed my hopes. In the year 1750 my other three brothers repaired to the adjacent islands, and there is no doubt but that they performed their duty with as much zeal as myself. In the year 1754, finding myself oppressed with illness, I thought proper to communicate the present declaration to the chiefs of the island, in order that they might give the most necessary information to those of the company of Jesus, who might be conducted by Providence to this island, to enable them to employ their zeal and strength for the good of christianity, by promulgating the name of our Saviour among this people, who are sober, and of good manners, and live  
live

live in the most absolute independence, both of China and Japan. Excepting some merchant vessels of those nations, no other have ever been seen here. Nevertheless I have seen Dutch vessels pass at a very small distance from this island. A. M. D. G. B. V. M. E. S. P. N. I. Done the 18th September, 1754, at the Island Usmay Ligon."

IGNATIO SALIS, Missionary  
to the Indies, of the So-  
ciety of Jesus, and of the  
Portuguese Nation.

After I had perused this paper, I returned it to the person from whom I received it. But I first kissed it, which mark of respect seemed to have conciliated their esteem: they gave us to understand by signs that they were desirous of returning to inform their countrymen of the news. After their departure, finding myself entirely recovered, I went out to see the situation of the work, and I had the satisfaction to find that the vessel was entirely unladen. But my grief was extreme to see that all our furs were rotten. I gave orders therefore to open all the packages, and expose the whole to the air, with a view to save at least, part. I charged Mr. Baturin to superintend this business, as it related to the only resource on which we could depend, when we should arrive at China. On the approach of night, we appointed a guard and centinels, and the night passed in the most profound tranquility.

At day break I was informed that other inhabitants of the country had presented themselves, to the number of three hundred, without arms, each person having nothing but a parasol in his hand. Two chiefs, who preceded them, approached me, and after having made the sign of the cross, they

presented their hands, and then exhibited to me an old Breviary, which was borne upon a carpet by four men. By the inscription I saw that the Breviary had belonged to the Missionary Salis, and in order to join in the respect these islanders shewed to the memory of that Jesuit, I likewise kissed this book. I then gave orders to my companions to bring a large crucifix, which they had taken out of the Church of Bolkha. I directed them to present it to the islanders. It was covered with a veil, and as soon as this was raised, the islanders fell on their knees, and raising their hands towards heaven, cried out *Hifos, Hifos, Christos, Christos*, and as I saw that they would not rise as long as the crucifix was before them, I caused it to be removed; whereupon the two chiefs arose, and embraced me alternately, and gave me to understand that their friendship was sincere. It was unfortunate that we could not make ourselves understood by words, and we found much difficulty in the use of signs. I succeeded however in explaining, by my signs and gestures, that our vessel was damaged, and that we were in want of habitations and fresh provisions.

Having thus comprehended my request, they left me; and in the course of an hour we saw several boats arrive, which brought mats and wood, and others with people on board, who came to build huts for us. Another party of the islanders arrived with rice, potatoes, bananas, sugar-canes, a kind of brandy, with provisions of fish, flesh, and fruit. These immediately set to work to cook for us all. Lastly, about noon, another party arrived with carpenter's tools, and gave us to understand that they were disposed to assist us, by working on board. I was desirous however that the company should have some rest, and therefore made signs that the work would not begin till two days after.

According

According to the Report, five sick: the vessel aground at the Island Usmay Ligon.

Tuesday, August the 16th: the whole company was busied in assisting the natives of the country to construct cabins, in which four of the associates might lodge together, or two officers. One hut was built for myself alone, at the head of the camp, about which we raised a palisade, flanked with four cannon.

The inconvenience we suffered in not being able to make ourselves understood by the islanders, induced me to give orders to all the company who could write, to make a kind of Dictionary of Russian words, and enquire their signification from the natives in their own language. This appeared to me to be the only practicable means of making ourselves understood.

At two o'clock dinner was served up to the company. It consisted of rice, bananas, and potatoes, stewed with flesh; and our new cooks informed us that the custom of the country was to make three meals a day. For drink they gave us a kind of hydromel and arrack.

This day, being desirous of regulating every thing which concerned our interest, I caused the work to be renewed on board by fourteen associates, under the command of Mr. Czurin: Mr. Kuzneczow undertook to repair the sails and rigging: Mr. Baturin, took charge of the cargo: Mr. Crustiew undertook to look to our subsistence; the military service was put under the command of Mr. Panow, and I undertook to treat with the natives of the country, whose good and amiable character often excited in me the desire of sharing with them an easy and happy life. For the island was exceedingly fertile; the climate though hot appeared excellent, and the people were independent. These were powerful motives to a man who

was

was weary of being the sport of fortune : but unfortunately the hour of my repose was not yet arrived, and it was necessary for me to bear the burthen of the charge I had undertaken.

In the evening several islanders came to me, and being seated, they often repeated the word Dzignaro, raising their hands towards the sky. Mr. Panow was the first who suspected that they meant to pronounce Ignatio, and in fact when they attempted to repeat that word, they always said Dxignaro. The respect with which they pronounced this name, convinced me that the Missionary had skilfully availed himself of their dispositions to impress them with the most profound reverence for his religion. They left me at last with much regret. After their departure I collected the different notes of the names of things which had been made in the language of the country, according to my orders, and I had the satisfaction to find, that their number amounted to above a hundred, which could not fail of proving highly useful. Mr. Kuzneczow requested permission to make an excursion over the island with some of the associates ; but I refused him that satisfaction, at the same time observing, that I was apprehensive of giving occasion to some misunderstanding between our people and the natives.

The night passed in a state of tranquility, and in the morning I was visited by an islander of distinction, whom I then saw for the first time. He was attended by a number of others, among whom I perceived several of our earlier friends ; and as all the natives shewed him the most profound veneration, I judged it proper likewise to pay a particular attention to him. He was clothed in a robe of sky blue taffeta, with a long cloak of white silk, a black sash, and wooden slippers, covered with satin. On his head he wore a kind of hat of a  
very

very fine fur. When he came near me he likewise made the sign of the cross, and took me by the hand. I did the same, and as I had learned some words of the language, I saluted him, by pronouncing the word *Tbo*. He inclined his head, and smiled at my embarrassment. But I was greatly surpris'd to hear him speak to me in very bad Portuguese, though sufficient to make himself understood. He said, *Sinor eo sono Tunquino vay con Padre Dsignaro estas Islas Usma Padre vay morte eo fies a ca Capiton di Genté*. I comprehended that he meant to inform me that he was a native of Tonquin, who came to those islands with Father Ignatio, and that the father being dead, he remained, and was chief of the people. This discovery of the power of making myself understood gave me the highest pleasure. I seized the immediate occasion to express my joy. He then demanded if I was desirous of seeing the tomb of Dsignaro; and upon my answering in the affirmative, he appointed three old men of distinction to accompany me. But as it was necessary to cross the bay, we embarked in the shallop, with Messrs. Panow, Kuzneczow and Baturin.

Our conductors directed us to the mouth of a river, where the shallop, not being able to enter, we anchored, and the natives called boats, which fet us on shore. On our landing we found about fifty persons of both sexes, who kneeled down, and cried *Ilo Dsignaro*, (The friend of Ignatio.) Our conductors then led us to a garden, where we found an old man, busied in collecting flowers and plants. He introduced us into a very neat and well-built hut, and entertained us with tea, but without sugar. Our conductors then spoke privately with him, who immediately made a sign to us to follow him, and led us to a small hill, which overlooked a very agreeable valley, regularly

larly planted with pulse and fugar canes. When we arrived at the summit we found a small square building, in the interior part of which we saw an altar, and upon it a crucifix, and an image of St. Mary, which though very ill executed, was distinguished by the crescent beneath her feet, and the crown on her head.

The guardian of the chapel shewed me likewise two urns, in which the ashes of Dzignaro (Father Ignatio) were contained. At going out of the chapel I could clearly distinguish the letters I. H. S. O. H. M. D. G. B. V. M. O. S. Nque JESU, Anno 1751. I likewise observed some verses, but the writing was so much decayed that I could not make out a single line.

After having visited the sacred monuments of those people, I returned home, where I learned, with the greatest satisfaction, that the damages of the vessel would be easily repaired, and that our people were employed in making new pumps, the old ones being unfit for service. Mr. Czurin having likewise informed me that the main top sail yard was sprung, I gave him orders to search in the woods for a piece to replace it, but I was answered that the natives had brought several pieces exceedingly proper for the purpose. This day I gave orders for distributing pieces of silk and cotton to the company, to make shirts, frocks, and trowsers, in order that they might all have an uniform appearance. Mr. Winbladth, who, notwithstanding my prohibition, had made an excursion, informed me, that he had seen very handsome habitations and villages, and had observed large quantities of different fruits, such as cocoa nuts, oranges, lemons, pine-apples, bananas, water melons, sweet melons, grapes, potatoes, rice, maize, millet, peas, and other pulse; and that in the plantations

tations he had seen bee-hives, sugar-canes, tobacco and cotton. He assured me besides that he had visited a manufactory of pottery and a distillery of spirits; and added that all the women in the villages were busied in making stuffs, either of silk or cotton. I verified this information myself the same day, and my stay upon this fortunate island increased my ardent desire to form an establishment there.

According to the Report, two sick: the ship under repair.

Wednesday, August the 17th, we had scarcely finished our repast, when the Tonquin Captain arrived; I informed him of my wishes, and the advantageous idea I had formed of the happiness of this people. He replied, that it depended only on myself, whether I should fix my residence among them, and that if I chose it, he would propose to the nation to give me a tract of land? but in the first place he was desirous of knowing who I was; how we came to the island, &c. I told him the truth, and my narration, though it was impossible he should well understand it, affected him so much, that he wept, and offered me his friendship. It was doubtless, with a view to repay my confidence, that he likewise related his adventures, which were to the following effect.

He was born at Tonquin, of a free family, and studied at Siam in the college of Missionaries. He afterwards, accompanied a Missionary to China, who joining himself with three others, at Nankin, embarked together with himself in a Chinese vessel, called a Sampan, which conveyed them to one of the islands of Usmay. Father Ignatio established himself at this island, Usmay Ligon, and the others departed for other islands. He afterwards gave a full account of the means employed by Father Ignatio to convert the islanders to Christianity, and

and protested that the said Father enjoyed a supreme power in this island, until his death; after which the islanders forced him to marry among them. He observed that they had the greatest veneration for himself; but he declared that it was not in consequence of any particular right attached to his person, as the government of the island depended on an assembly of old men, to which the chiefs of the families of the neighbouring islands were often invited. This form of government surprized me, and I could not avoid asking a thousand questions, which led me to a just idea of the constitution and government of this people, of which I propose to give a note at the end of the Journal of my happy residence on this island. Our discourse was interrupted by the arrival of a troop of islanders, whom my friend Nicholas informed of my desire to establish myself amongst them: this declaration was very agreeable to them, for they assured me that they would divide their possessions with us, instruct us in the manner of working and tilling the ground, and would give us their daughters in marriage. But as I saw the idea of our establishment gave them great satisfaction, and was aware that in order to form a colony it was necessary I should be provided with a set of men, very different from my present companions; I thought it proper to inform them that my establishment could not take place until two years were elapsed, which were necessary for me to return to Europe, and return back again. I found no difficulty in bringing these estimable people to my wish; the open simplicity of their answers shewed their virtuous and innocent dispositions. They assured me that they would pray to God for my happy voyage, and quick return, and that during my stay I might consider them as my brothers.

After this declaration, they demanded, why I did not come among them, nor permit my companions

panions to live with them in a cordial manner. I declared to Nicholas that my only apprehension was that our good intelligence might be interrupted by the inconsistency of my companions, who might displease the islanders by caressing their women. But he set my mind at ease in that respect, by informing me that they were at liberty to connect themselves with the girls, provided they abstained from the married women, who were known by a veil which covered them. Upon this assurance, I promised that from thenceforth, considering the natives of this island as our brothers, we would visit them. But I pressed M. Nicholas to make my excuses for not having politely informed the ladies before hand, and apologized by freely telling my reasons, and the fears I had entertained. The islanders answered laughing, that their daughters were younger than their wives, and that therefore I had no reason to fear their displeasure on that account.

After this explanation, the islanders retired, no doubt for the purpose of acquainting their families, with the intention that they might receive us with kindness. When they were gone, I assembled the company, communicated my apprehensions to them, and required of each individual a solemn promise to behave with the utmost circumspection to these islanders; and having received their oaths, I declared that they were free to visit the whole island, provided one third of their number always remained at work. This news produced universal joy among them, and they immediately dispersed themselves, but without arms, as I had caused them to leave their arms with me. In the evening a meeting was held, consisting of Mr. Crustiew, Panow, Kuzneczow, Baturin, Winbladth, Meder, Gurcsinin and Czurin, where we debated on the means of deriving advantage from the discovery  
and

and knowledge we had acquired of this fortunate island. We determined that the disposition of our companions rendered it impossible to leave any of them behind; for I was desirous of leaving a party in order to dispose the minds of the natives to receive a colony in future. Being thus disappointed in my hopes, I felt the most lively regret at not being able to profit by so favourable an occasion; and after having dismissed the meeting, I was plunged in a series of reflections which were exceedingly distressing.

At day break I repaired to the nearest village, which was not above a quarter of an hour's walk from our camp; but concealed by a thick wood. Upon my arrival near the enclosure, I was received in a small building of wood, from which I could easily see all the houses in the village. It consisted of about eighty houses, each having a court-yard before it, with a garden and several huts, or out-houses. All the houses were constructed of wood, and covered with planks, and formed a single, wide, and handsome street, bordered on each side by very lofty and tufted trees. Upon entering the village I met Nicholas, who conducted me to his house, before which all the people were assembled. He asked me if I was disposed to make choice of a girl, but, as I replied in the negative, he declared that my companions were of a better composition; and, in fact, I found few of them who were not accompanied by young women, some of whom were real beauties. My friend Nicholas regaled us with tea, and engaged the islanders to form matches at wrestling, at which they are very expert, and afterwards the young women danced to the sound of several stringed instruments. These amusements lasted till the repast was served up in the court-yard of the house, which was a square enclosure, surrounded with trees. Every head of  
a family

a family caused dishes, ready dressed, to be brought from his own house, and the whole was conducted in such a manner that every one contributed his share, without the charge falling upon any individual. The women eat separately, and the young women waited on both parties.

At the end of our meal, the juice of sugar cane, which we drank, was mixed with a kind of spirit made from rice. This drink was very strong and exhilarating. From one subject to another, our conversation at last returned to the proposal made to me to choose one of their young women, which was again urged, and at last so strongly pressed, that I could not avoid saying that I was willing to make my choice at that time, but should reserve the accomplishment of my marriage till I returned. I had scarcely said this, before the chiefs arose, and the whole company disappeared, and left me alone with my friend Nicholas, by whom I was informed that the islanders were gone to nominate seven young women to be presented to me, in order that I might choose a wife from among them. In fact, we had scarcely time to take a survey of his courtyard, his garden, and the small houses of his women, (for a plurality of wives is established and constitutional, notwithstanding the religion of Father Ignatio) before we were informed of the arrival of the islanders.

The old men first seated themselves upon mats in the court, forming a circle. Seven women, whose faces were covered, led each a young woman, clothed from head to foot in white silk, with a blue sash; their hair flowed loose on their shoulders, and was interwoven with flowers. When the seven young women entered the circle, my friend Nicholas led me likewise there, and requested me to sit down and examine these charming objects, in order to determine my choice. During

ring this interval, one of the old men pronounced a discourse of some length, which he ended by presenting me with a veil, and by the mediation of Nicholas, he gave me to understand, that I was requested to cover her with it, on whom my affections were fixed. The choice would have been rather difficult, if it had really been incumbent on me to decide; for there were three among them who might have disputed the preference with the most perfect work of living nature. But as my embarrassment was only imaginary, I asked my friend whether my choice would not offend the others, and upon his answering in the negative, I threw the veil over one of them. The others immediately began to dance round her, and caress her, and at last conducted her out of the house to the street, where she was preceded by musical instruments. My friend Nicholas informed me that this ceremony would last upwards of an hour, because the young woman would be conducted to every house, to announce her own marriage, and receive presents. In the mean time the chiefs were regaled with tea, and smoked tobacco.

About five o'clock I saw the new married lady return, conducted by her mother, who was about four or five and thirty years of age, and they were accompanied by a respectable old man, who was grandfather to the young woman. This old man made a speech, and embraced me; the mother put her daughter into my hands, and leaving her with me, they disappeared suddenly, as did likewise the rest of the chiefs. Nicholas then acquainted me that I must myself conduct the young lady to his house, in which he assisted me, by leading the way. At the door of this house she quitted me, and Nicholas attended me back to the camp.

During our walk, he informed me, that the newly married young woman was the daughter of  
a very

a very devout christian mother, who had been constantly attached to Father Ignatio; and as he had mentioned his grandfather to me without telling the name of his father, I questioned him positively on the subject. He at first affected concealment, but at last confessed that Seignior Dsignaro was his father, and he had likewise two elder sisters, who were among the seven presented to me for my choice. He informed me that the young person I had chosen was named Tinto Volangta, (or luminous moon) and that I might certainly expect her soon at my own place of residence. He then left me, after promising to come again to visit me in the morning.

As soon as I found myself alone, I informed my companions of my adventure, and several of them determined to pass the night with me, in order to avoid certain embarrassments; and to answer this purpose more effectually, I requested all the female companions of our voyage to be present, to amuse those who might come from the village. At nine o'clock I was acquainted with the arrival of a body of young women, who came towards our camp singing. Their number amounted to twenty, and they were received and introduced by our women. But as soon as Tinto Volangta entered my hut, the others retired, so that I found myself under the necessity of having a female companion. It was a fortunate circumstance that one of our lady passengers was greatly interested by the young islander, and gave her much entertainment by singing and music; but the rest of our conversation was pantomime.

The break of day surpris'd us without sleep, except the Usmayan lady, who fell asleep about eight o'clock. When she awoke, two other young women attended to dress her, and afterwards staid with her. At ten my friend Nicholas arrived with  
a nume-

a numerous company, I went out to meet them, and upon being informed that they came to make a treaty, or oath, I gave immediate orders for assembling our company. The heads of the contract were, that the inhabitants of Usmay Ligon, should acknowledge me as their friend, and that I should engage in an attachment to them. That as I was about to leave them, only with the intention of returning to form an establishment among them, they would clear a piece of land on the Southern part of the island, and build a village, of two hundred houses, for the accommodation of myself, and those who might come with me. And lastly, that on my return to Usmay, I should conform to all the usages and laws of my friends.

These articles being ratified by the invocation of God, the creator of all things, I thought it incumbent on me to make my new countrymen a present. Accordingly I gave them eighty musquets, twenty barrels of powder, ten barrels of ball, six hundred Japanese sabres, six hundred lances, and twelve hundred different articles of iron work. This present was highly valuable to them, for they had not above ten musquets on the island, and those had matchlocks. It was a very unfortunate circumstance that I could not leave a detachment on this island.

According to the Report one sick : the ship under repair, careening.

Thursday, August 18. About two in the evening, the islanders brought ten oxen, forty hogs, a quantity of rice, millet, and other provisions. On this day likewise, having, by the credit of Nicholas, brought the chiefs to listen to my reasons, I sent Tinto Volangta back to her mother's house, whom I loaded with presents from the Japanese prize. As to my friend Nicholas, I made him a considerable present of furs, though I had but a  
small

small quantity remaining, the sea water having damaged almost all the packages. In the evening I informed the islanders of my approaching departure, at which they were greatly affected, and expressed their regret on the occasion. The open and benevolent character of this estimable people, was such as will make me ever regret that I could not fix my abode here, where the vices and wickedness of Europe are yet unknown, and the government is founded only upon the principles of humanity.

After the departure of the islanders, I ordered my people to float the vessel, and get the cargo on board. Our work commenced the next day. At nine o'clock, five of the associates appeared before me, and demanded permission to remain upon the island. I saw that their resolution was fixed; and having reason to fear that they might excite a greater number of the company to the same determination, I represented to them that they were wrong in taking such a resolution at this time, as they were sure of returning: for I protested to them that I would use every exertion, when we arrived in Europe, to obtain a proper armament to establish a colony on the island. At first they seemed disposed to quit their purpose; but one of them, named Lapfiew, declared that it was only a loss of time to attempt to dissuade them, as they were determined not to change their mind; and therefore, that if I were disposed to give them a proof of my friendship, I might shew it by leaving them a supply of tools, arms, and ammunition. I promised this to make them easy; but I made them swear that they would not seduce any others of the company.

When they were gone, I assembled a Committee, to whom I communicated the desire of the five men. The Committee referred the business

to the General Meeting, which was immediately convened, and their decision was, that leave should be given them to remain on the island. Three others joined them, and M. Stephanow was likewise desirous of remaining; but the others refused him, saying, that as they had taken their resolution for no other reason than to live in peace, they would not have an incendiary among them.

In consequence of this resolution of the meeting, I ordered Mr. Cruftiew to divide what we could spare, into eight lots, in order that every subsequent controversy between our companions who were to remain behind, might be prevented by a proper division made in our presence. At eleven, we saw three large barks enter the harbour, where they anchored. My friend Nicholas informed me, that they were Japanese, from the coast of China, who were driven in by stress of weather. He requested, that I would invite them to come on shore, which they did, bringing with them a present of tea, porcelain, and some pearls.

August 19. This day we were visited by upwards of one thousand islanders, every one bringing some present. The whole amounted to upwards of one thousand eight hundred ells of cloth, two hundred and five parasols, with a quantity of china vessels, and some ivory figures, ornamented with gold. In the evening, by the mediation of Nicholas, I recommended to the islanders those companions who had determined to remain, and they all protested that they would receive and acknowledge them as friends and brothers, and give them a share of their lands and possessions. In this manner I secured their respective interests. At four o'clock I gave orders for going on board. The value of my cargo was so much reduced, that it was not worth more than a million and a half of piastres which I expected

pected to receive at China, I had scarcely sufficient to realize twenty or twenty-five thousand piaſtres. The night was employed in work; and at day-break I had the ſatisfaction to ſee all my people on board. I judged it proper to aſſure myſelf of the diſpoſition of the iſlanders, by a formal oath and contract, which was drawn up in the language of Lequeio, and the counterpart in Latin, ſigned by both parties. I took the Latin part with me, and they preſerved the other. Its contents were as follow :—

“ A Treaty, concluded between the chiefs and  
 “ people of the iſlands Lequeio, and the Baron  
 “ Mauritius Auguſtus de Benyowſky, in the name  
 “ of the company under his direction. Con-  
 “ tracted and ſigned on the 19th of Auguſt, in  
 “ the year 1771, at the iſland Uſmay Ligon, one  
 “ of Lequeio.”

“ In the preſence of God, who created the  
 “ heavens and the earth, We, the chiefs and peo-  
 “ ple of the iſland of Uſmay Ligon, and the  
 “ other Lequeio, of the one part, and I, the  
 “ Baron Mauritius Auguſtus de Benyowſky, of  
 “ the other part, do ſtipulate :”

“ That I, Mauritius Auguſtus de Benyowſky,  
 “ do oblige myſelf, and do promiſe, upon my  
 “ faith as a Chriſtian, to return to this iſland, as  
 “ ſoon as poſſible, with a ſociety of virtuous,  
 “ good, and juſt men, to dwell upon this iſland,  
 “ and to adopt the manners, uſages, and laws of  
 “ the inhabitants.”

“ And we, the chiefs and people, call to witneſs  
 “ that God who created the heavens and the  
 “ earth, that we will, at any time hereafter, re-  
 “ ceive our friend Mauritius, with all thoſe who  
 “ ſhall be his friends: that we will ſhare with  
 “ them our lands, and will aſſiſt them in all their  
 “ labours, until their eſtabliſhments ſhall be equal

“ to our own ; and, in the mean time, his friends,  
 “ who remain with us, shall be considered as the  
 “ children of our families, and treated as bro-  
 “ thers.”

“ MAURITIUS, in the name of  
 “ the company of Euro-  
 “ peans.”

“ NICHOLAS, for the chiefs and  
 “ people of Usmay, and  
 “ the Lequeio islands.”

After the conclusion of this treaty, I assembled those among my companions who were determined to fix their residence among this worthy people. I gave them instructions for the regulation of their conduct, and at last I embraced and quitted them to go on board. A prodigious number of islanders followed me, who by their cries and tears, exhibited an affecting spectacle of goodness of heart, and tenderness of disposition. We were ready to set sail at day-break : I therefore begged my friend Nicholas to request the islanders to go on board their boats ; but several of the chiefs, fastening their canoes to the vessel, determined to accompany me till my departure. I weighed, at 10 A. M. and sailed out of the harbour without any unfortunate accident.

According to the Report, the whole company in good health ; the vessel making no water.

Saturday, August the 20th at sea, under the top-sails ; fine weather, but excessively hot ; a fresh breeze, and smooth water ; saw a large quantity of fishing birds around us. At half past one P. M. the islanders at last took their leave, and embarked in their canoes, to return to the island. About six we saw a great number of porpoises ;  
 the

the weather was fine throughout the night. About eleven we discovered land a-head, extending from N. W. to S. E. I therefore came to an anchor in twenty-eight fathom fine sand, and took advantage of this anchorage to set up the rigging afresh, as this part of the service had been neglected. At day-break we perceived that the whole of the standing rigging required setting up, for which reason I was forced to continue the work. During this time several boats arrived, with which we trafficked, exchanging knives, and some other trifles, for a quantity of shells, very neatly wrought.

According to the Report, all well; the ship making no water.

Latitude in  $28^{\circ} 43'$ ; longitude in  $327^{\circ} 18'$ . Wind E. N. E. Current from the Northward. Course S. S. W.

Sunday, August the 21st. fine clear weather, and smooth water. At one P. M. weighed, and made sail, with all the sails set, and hauled the wind, to double the Southern point of the island. At six we doubled another small island, which lay to the Northward. About day-break we saw another on the starboard beam, to the Southward.

According to the Report, all well; the ship making no water.

Latitude in  $28^{\circ} 8'$ ; longitude in  $329^{\circ} 2'$ . Wind E. N. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. Current from N. to S. Course S. E.

Monday, August the 22d. Fine weather and smooth water, but the heat almost insupportable. About noon the wind became variable, and veered to the Southward. It fixed at S. E. I therefore took advantage of the fine weather, and set all our sails, with which I might have made a good progress, if the wind had not abated, and came round to the Eastward. At nine A. M. saw two

ships standing from S. to N. right towards us ; I therefore gave orders to prepare for battle, and appointed a number of the best marksmen in the tops. At eleven we were within cannon shot, and I then perceived that they were Hollanders, one carrying eighteen guns, and the other twelve.

According to the Report all well, prepared for battle, under the top-sails. The ship making no water.

Latitude  $26^{\circ} 20'$ ; longitude in  $327^{\circ} 2'$ . Wind E. No current. Course S. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S.

Tuesday, August the 23d. One of the two vessels coming nearly within musket shot of us, fired a ball, and hailed us to come on board, and bring our papers. This behaviour of the Dutch Captain surprized me greatly, and so much the more as being entirely ignorant of the maritime laws, I knew not what he meant by my papers : for this reason I answered by four cannon-shot, and the musquetry began to play from the tops, which greatly incommoded him. He waited for his companion, who at last came to his assistance, but was contented to keep out a considerable distance from us. I then hoisted the colours of the Republic of Poland, and continued my course due S.. They were at first disposed to follow me, but having observed that I made preparations for receiving them, by clewing up my courses, they adopted the wisest conduct for them, which was to put about, and continue their course ; for I had determined to board one of the two, and make them pay dear for what they had done. This slight combat, the first I ever saw at sea, cost us only a few shot, and the trouble of performing our manœuvres. As to the Hollanders, I know not what their acquisitions were.

According

According to the Report, all well; the ship making no water.

Latitude in  $24^{\circ} 45'$ ; longitude in  $327^{\circ} 0'$ . Wind E. No current. Course S.

Wednesday, August the 24th. Weather rather blustering, but without rain, and a rising sea. Being under-way, with all sails set, the associates, from the information they had found in Anson's Voyage, requested me to sail to the island of Formosa, in order that they might add the knowledge of this island to their other discoveries. Their proposition was likewise agreeable to myself, I therefore promised to carry their request into execution.

According to the Report, all well; the vessel making no water.

Latitude in  $23^{\circ} 18'$ ; longitude in  $327^{\circ} 0'$  Wind E. Current from the Southward. Course S.

Thursday, August the 25th. The weather constantly disposed to squally, with rain at intervals. Conformably to the request of my associates, I changed my course, and stood to the Westward, and  $W. \frac{1}{4} S.$  we had a strong current setting to the Southward.

According to the Report, all well; the ship making no water.

Latitude in  $23^{\circ} 22'$ ; longitude in  $325^{\circ} 0'$ . Wind E. Current from the Southward. Course  $W. \frac{1}{4} S.$

Friday, August the 26th. About three P. M. a strong breeze arose, which obliged me to hand all the sails but the mizen. At six, a heavy rain came on, and abated the wind, which veered round to the N. E. About three A. M. I was awakened by the news of land. We had barely time to turn the ship's head to the Southward, when we clewed up the mizen, and let go an anchor in eighteen fathom water, the bottom being coral rock. At day-break we found ourselves near a rock; the  
island

island of Formosa being in sight, and appearing to be very high land. I immediately weighed, and doubling the North point of the small island, stood towards the land, and moored at the opening of a bay, in fourteen fathom water, greenish sand. The associates were busied the whole night, in preparing the boats, and clearing their arms, which were distributed with the necessary ammunition.

At four A. M. Mr. Kuzneczow, and Mr. Wynbladth, were sent on shore, with the canoe and the shallop, with sixteen men. At eight we heard three musket shot on shore, which I answered with one of my great guns. After this we heard a constant firing. At half-past nine we at last perceived our boats, returning round a point of the land. Three of the detachment were wounded with arrows, and they brought with them five prisoners, two of whom were dangerously wounded.

Here follows the Report of Mr. Kuzneczow.

After having reached shore, in a commodious bay, where I found the soundings every where from eight to five, and three fathoms, I advanced with a detachment of ten associates, towards a fire, which we discovered. Mr. Wynbladth remained with the boats under his care. We found two Indians, and a woman, near the fire, whom we gave to understand, that we were in want of food. One of them immediately went off, and returned in less than an hour after, with three other Indians, armed with lances, who made signs to us to follow them. They conducted us to a village, and as we refused to enter into their huts, they brought us boiled rice, with roasted pork, and a quantity of lemons and oranges. The islanders appeared quiet, and were not numerous; but as I had observed a crowd, at the extremity of the village, and several armed bodies of men who went out, I imagined that they intended to seek a cause of quarrel with

us ;

us ; for which reason I persuaded my companions to proceed back again, in order to carry the news on board, that we had formed a very convenient anchoring place. Accordingly, after having given the islanders some knives, in return for the refreshment we had taken, we began to return. But we had scarcely reached the place where we had first seen the fire lighted, before we heard a cry, and were attacked by a shower of arrows, which wounded three of my people. I gave orders to fire immediately on the enemy, and the first discharge checked their impetuosity, when they saw half a dozen of their party extended on the ground. For my own part, not being desirous of amusing myself in that place, I gave orders to carry one of my companions, who could not walk, and effected my retreat. The islanders were preparing to fall upon us a second time, when fortunately for us, the cannon shot, from on board, intimidated them, and caused them to leave us for a time at liberty. But when we came to the sea shore we were attacked by a great number of the savages. It was a happy circumstance that Mr. Wynbladth was on the spot. We then fell upon them, and after having overthrown at least sixty, we made five prisoners, and collected a quantity of lances and bows, which are now in the boats.

Upon this information, I would have quitted the place, as I was not desirous of exposing myself to a war with the natives ; but my associates insisted that I should enter the harbour. I found it impossible to calm their fury, and for that reason, at last consented. We therefore weighed, and with a slight breeze from the Eastward, and the boats a-head, I entered the bay, and anchored at the distance of one hundred fathoms off shore.

According

According to the Report, three wounded, and five prisoners of war.

Saturday, August the 27th, moored in a bay at the mouth of a river, on the island of Formosa. As soon as I had got the ship moored, I ordered twenty-eight men on shore, under the command of Messrs. Baturin and Cruftiew, who went on board the shallop, and rowed towards the shore. As soon as they landed, they were met by fifty islanders, who held branches of trees in their hands; and as these people came without arms, Mr. Baturin received them kindly. They threw themselves first at the feet of my people, and by their signs gave them to understand, that they intreated forgiveness. This voluntary submission disarmed the rage of my companions, and several of them ran to the shore, and called out, that all was well. Upon these pacific appearances, the associates imagined that they might enjoy themselves in the habitations of the Indians, and declared to Messrs. Baturin and Cruftiew, that they were desirous of going to the village. Their absurd obstinacy gave way to no persuasions; for in spite of the remonstrances of those gentlemen, twenty-two departed for the village. Being informed of this mutiny, I determined to go on shore myself, with fifteen other associates, and immediately directed my march towards the village, which was not far off. I had scarcely made a few steps, before I heard a violent firing and horrible cries. The noise increased, and at last I saw my people retreating, and pursued by a number of blacks, who hastily followed them. When they came near me, they rallied, but no more than seven of them were armed, the others being entirely naked, with several arrows sticking in their bodies. I gave orders, therefore, for those who had no arms, to retire towards the vessel, and rallied

lied the others; by whose assistance I stopped the crowd of islanders, among whom I observed several armed with our muskets. Unfortunately for them, they knew not how to use them; and as they were more advanced than the others, they were quickly destroyed by our fire. Only two of them escaped, who threw down their muskets to favour their flight. At the moment the Indians made their retreat, or rather fled, Mr. Kuznezow arrived with twenty fresh companions, who chased them out of their village, and at last set fire to it in several places. After the total defeat of the islanders, the dead were counted; and it was found that they amounted to upwards of two hundred, without reckoning those who were wounded, and had fled.

On our return from this expedition, a party of the associates discovered a small harbour in the river, in which they found seven boats, and a bark in an unfinished state. They set fire to the bark, and brought away the boats, which were loaded with the arms of the islanders. As soon as this operation was ended, I went on board, and put the chiefs of the mutiny against Messrs. Baturin and Cruftiew in irons.

This accident abated the desire of the company to prolong their stay. They therefore requested me to seek another anchoring place. Taking advantage of the calm, I weighed, and by the help of the boats towed the vessel out of the sound. We had scarcely doubled the north point, before the current carried us to the northward. At day break we found ourselves opposite a small bay, into which I determined to enter; but as the current tended to drive us beyond it, I came to anchor in twenty-six fathom. About eight, a light breeze sprung up, and I was preparing to set sail, when I saw two canoes rowing towards us. At ten they came

near

near us, and one of them hailed us, crying out, Signor Houvritto, vai, vai. They made signs to us to follow them, which I did, having all my boats out to assist in case of accidents; but we happily entered into a very beautiful harbour, where I anchored near the Southern shore, with a view to be sheltered from all winds. The depth of water was three fathom, and the vessel was so near the land, that a man could jump on shore.

According to the Report, eleven wounded, three prisoners of war, two having died.

N. B. I must here observe, that I found in this season, a violent current along the island Formosa, which carried the vessel\*  $1\frac{3}{4}$  leagues per hour; but I observed that this current caused the vessel to follow all the sinuosities of the shore, and kept us always at the same distance from it.

Sunday, August the 28th. At anchor in the harbour† on the island of Formosa, fine clear weather, but excessively hot. We had scarcely time to coil up our running rigging, before a prodigious number of islanders, of both sexes, appeared with poultry, rice, sugar-canes, hogs, oranges, and other fruits, which they exchanged with us for pins, needles, and other small articles. Though these people behaved themselves with circumspection, I would not venture to place any confidence in them. For this reason, I constantly kept a dozen of the associates armed. About three, P. M. a crowd of islanders appeared, having at their head a man clothed in a droll manner, partly in the European, and partly in the Indian fashion. On his head he wore a laced hat, a large sword hung by his side, his stockings were made of cloth, and his shoes were no doubt of his own manufacture. This appearance surprized me, and I immediately sent Mr. Kuzneczow to meet him; but

\* To the Northward; as it appears from the preceding text.

† A blank left in the MS by the copyist, and neglected to be filled up by the Count.

as he could not understand his language, he brought him on board, where I learned, that he was a Spaniard of Manilla, who had lived seven or eight years among these islanders, and he had acquired the confidence of several cantons. He made me a very civil offer of his house; but as I thought it necessary to make a minute enquiry before I trusted him, he informed me, that he had fled from Manilla to the island Formosa, in a vessel, manned by six of his slaves; and that he had been forced to this proceeding, in consequence of his having, in a moment of rage, massacred his wife, and a Dominican, whom he had found in her company. He said his name was Don Hieronimo Pacheco, formerly Captain of the port of Cavith, at Manilla. This Spaniard assured me, that I might trust the people of that canton, who were the best people in the world, and thought themselves under an obligation to me for having ill-treated their enemies: for he informed me that the news of my conduct, with respect to the\* had already arrived thither.

Upon this good news, I made him a present of a complete suit of cloaths, with some shirts, and a good sabre; I promised, besides, to give him fire arms, and other utensils, provided he was careful in assisting us, during our stay; upon which he promised, and declared that he would not quit me during the whole time I should remain on the island. In fact, after having spoken a short time to the islanders, they retired, and he remained with us that night.

In the evening, having received information that our water was in a putrid state, I gave orders for taking in fresh water at day-break; in consequence of which I enquired of Don Hieronimo Pacheco, the place where we could obtain the best water. He informed me that the islanders would bring me good spring water; but that there was a brook

\* Blank left in MS.

near an advanced rock, which he shewed me, in which we might obtain the best water in the world. But he warned me, at the same time, that the islanders of that canton were at war with his friends, and that it would, for that reason, be necessary to send a party of armed men thither, to guard the sailors while they filled their casks. Upon this information, I gave instructions to Mr. Panow to go early with twelve associates on the business; and recommended to him, at the same time, to be upon his guard against a surprize. Not content with this precaution, I gave orders for awakening me before their departure; and having called them all before me, I recommended to them a second time to be on their guard. They set off at last at eight A. M. having been detained to set up some casks.

After the departure of the boats, I entered into conversation with the Spaniard, who appeared to be perfectly acquainted with the island. It was from him I learned, that part of the island on the Western side, was subject to the Chinese; but that six parts out of seven were independent, one-third part of which only were savages, among whom we had at present fallen. He assured me, that with very little assistance, he thought it practicable to conquer the island, and drive out the Chinese. His reasoning, and the combination of circumstances which he mentioned, pleased me, and I attended to him with so much the more willingness, as I had conceived the project of carrying his plan into execution. I therefore availed myself of the present opportunity, to propose that he should return into Europe with me. But this he positively refused, and assured me, that he was sufficiently acquainted with Europe, to thank heaven that he was out of it. To this he added, that he was become familiarised with the manner of living in Formosa,

Formosa, and that as he had a good wife, and several children, neither his duty nor his inclination, would suffer him to leave them. Our conversation was interrupted by dinner.

According to the Report, eleven wounded, and three prisoners.

Monday, August the 29th. At anchor in port Maurice. Don Hieronimo remarked, that as the watering place was so near, he was surprized that our people did not return; and he begged me to send the shallop upon discovery. Mr. Kuzneczow immediately went with eight men, and returned about two, P. M. with the canoe and periagua in tow. As soon as I perceived them at a distance, I was surprized to see that some of them were covered with blood, and had arrows sticking in their bodies; and as I did not see either Mr. Panow or Mr. Loginow, I began to fear the worst. When the shallop came on board, Mr. Kuzneczow informed me, that Mr. Panow and Mr. Loginow were mortally wounded, and that John Popow was the first slain. After having received Messrs. Panow and Loginow, in order to give them every assistance, I enquired concerning the fact; and was informed, that Mr. Panow having visited the environs, and discovered no signs of any person being near, had been desirous of bathing, while the associates were at work, filling the casks; and that he himself had invited the others to follow his example. But he had scarcely laid aside his arms and cloaths, when he was attacked by twenty Indians, who shot at him with arrows; that Popow was one of the first who fell dead; and that afterwards Panow and Loginow fell, and all the others were wounded; and that certainly not one of them could have escaped, if Volinsky and Andre had not fired at the islanders from the canoe, into which they had retired. They added, that they dared  
not

not return on board and abandon Mr. Panow, who from time to time gave signs of life, as well as Mr. Loginow. They were in this situation when the shallop came to their relief.

After this information, I ran to my friend Panow, around whom I found all the company assembled; but as I was desirous of hearing what he said, without interrupting him, I did not come forward. The following were the words of this invaluable friend, which will ever be present in my memory.

“ My brothers,” said he to his companions, “ inform my friend, our commander, that my only regret at quitting life is, that I shall no longer be able to second and support his labours. Alas! he is very far from seeing their conclusion. Tell him, that I love him as my life; and that I should die contented, if I could have seen his merit and virtue recompensed. Intreat him in my name, not to revenge my death; but content himself with informing my brother of this misfortune. Take example, my friends, by me; if I had followed the advice of our chief and friend, I had still lived. Respect and obey him as a father; and thou, unhappy friend, Stephanow, lay aside thy haughtiness, and that hatred which is concealed in the bottom of thy heart, against this worthy friend. Supply my place by thy fidelity to him.” At these words I came forward;—but my God, what a sight! He seemed to have recovered all his powers. He grasped my hand, wept, and embraced me, but was unable to speak for a long time. At length, he exclaimed, “ Alas, dear friend! I shall soon be no more.—I am myself the cause.—But forgive me.—My last wish is, that heaven may ever give thee friends like me.—Thou art worthy of them, and happy are they who shall know thy worth, as I do: May heaven grant, that this land, which soon

soon shall cover my bones, may be thy patrimony.”  
—The power of death interrupted his words, and deprived me of this dear and most valuable friend.

Loginow had paid the debt of nature a few instants before. I determined to bury them immediately; but as I was desirous of providing, that their bodies might not be disturbed, I begged Don Hieronimo, to speak with his friends, the islanders, and request permission to bury them on their territory. To this they readily consented, and we performed their funerals with the greatest order. I fired twenty-one guns on this occasion, and ordered Andreanow to engrave the following words on a stone.

“ Here lies Vafili Panow, a Russian gentleman of illustrious birth and merit, the faithful friend of Mauritius Benyowsky, who was treacherously slain, with two other companions, John Loginow and John Papow, by the inhabitants of this island, on the 29th of August, 1771.”

After the burial, Don Hieronimo declared to me, that his friends had determined to avenge the death of my companions; and that, consequently, they would proceed to attack their neighbours. My associates joined in this proposal for vengeance, which had already began by the massacre of our three Indian prisoners. While I was thus urged to come to a determination, the Spaniard informed me, that the canoe we saw rowing towards us, was filled with our enemies. My associates waited for no orders, but rushed on board the boats, and attacked them. Their first discharge flew thirteen, and the others they immediately brought on board, and hung at the yard-arm. I represented to them that this execution was enough, and that it was prudent to terminate our warfare here; but, alas! I preached to the deaf. They persisted in their de-

VOL. II. D termination

termination to go in quest of the Indians, and make them feel their vengeance. As I saw I could make no impression on the minds of these enraged men, I was forced to promise to direct their proceedings, that they might not expose their lives to no purpose.

My resolution being once made, I entered seriously into the business. For this reason, I requested the Spaniard to guide my people towards the principal residence of the nation, who had given so bad a reception to us; and as he promised to accompany us, I gave him a good carabine. He requested leave to bring with him a couple of hundred of his Indian friends; in answer to which I represented, that these poor people might become the victims of their good intentions, and be slain by my comrades for want of knowing them. However, he removed my objection, by proposing, that every one of our party should wear a piece of white cloth on his left arm. This precaution appearing to me to be sufficient, I acquiesced in his demand, and he immediately went on shore to make his necessary preparations for the attack which was appointed to be made at day break.

About seven in the evening, I caused the boats to tow our vessel to the river of the massacre, where I anchored. At three, I ordered forty-six companions on shore, commanded by Messieurs Cruftiew, Kuzneczow, Baturin, Wyndbladth, and Stephanow; and we only waited for Don Hieronimo, who arrived at four. They then proceeded inland, and we heard nothing till about three quarters after six, when the noise of the musquetry convinced me that the action had began. Soon after I saw a number of islanders retiring towards a steep mountain; and then it was that my companions on board directed their pieces at them, and made a dreadful slaughter. These unhappy men, seeing themselves pressed on one side by my troops, and

on

on the other by the islanders, under the conduct of the Spaniard, threw themselves prostrate upon the ground. I was then forced to declare to my whole party, that I would fire upon them if they continued the massacre. On this message, the parties contented themselves with making prisoners, the number of whom amounted to six hundred and forty-three. The killed were reckoned and proved to be eleven hundred and fifty-six. What surprized me the most was, that among the wounded and prisoners there were a great number of women armed in the same manner as the men.

Our expedition being thus ended, without any of our side having received the slightest wound, I went on shore, and the Indians presented me with the slaves. But as I refused to keep any of them, the Spaniards chose fifty, and abandoned the rest to his friends. I contented myself with carrying all their arms on board. About ten o'clock, a party of our friends of the islanders, appeared with near two hundred women, children, and old men, whom they had made prisoners. The whole troop appeared to be overjoyed, and returned towards their habitations: but for my own part, being desirous of leaving a spot which presented nothing but the desolation of the village, which our party had set on fire, I retired with my vessel to our first station.

According to the Report, eleven wounded.

Monday, August the 30th. Having this day informed my friend the Spaniard, of my wish to establish a camp on shore, he begged I would permit him to make the necessary preparations. In consequence of my acceding to his request, he went on shore, and about three o'clock he returned with about five hundred islanders, who began to erect huts for us. Several were finished before evening. I therefore went on shore myself with

the women, and such of our people as were wounded, and a guard of sixteen men. At the close of the day, the islanders set a guard of forty men on our right flank, in order to secure us, as they said, from the attacks of the allies of the nation, with whom we had been at war.

At day-break, Don Hieronimo presented his family to me, with a great number of his friends, and likewise acquainted me that Huapo, a prince of the country, was coming to express his gratitude for my having avenged his subjects upon the two nations who were their enemies. He informed me, that Huapo lived in a town about thirty or thirty-two leagues distant inland; that the central parts of his dominions were well civilized, as was also the whole Western part of the island; the Eastern coast only being possessed by a savage people, among whom, however, he excepted the territory belonging to Huapo, which was inhabited by a gentle and industrious race. He added, that the Prince Huapo could muster twenty, or five and twenty thousand armed men, notwithstanding which he was often disturbed in his capital, either by the Chinese party, or their allies.

After this information, he insinuated that it would be easy to conclude a treaty with this prince, to form establishments in his country, the productions of which consisting in gold, crystal, cinnabar, rice, sugar, cinnamon, silk, and particularly the most beautiful kinds of wood, might form advantageous branches of commerce; in exchange for which they would receive a quantity of hardware, iron, and European cloth, to the profit of two hundred per cent. to the sellers. Such was our conversation, when it was interrupted by the arrival of the Bamini, or General. The Spaniard immediately hastened to meet him, and I caused my companions to honour him with three discharges  
of

of their musquetry. When he had arrived near my barracks, he caused a tent to be put up, the ground underneath being covered with a rich carpet, upon which he seated himself, and invited me to do the same. The Spaniard stood up to attend us, and serve as my interpreter.

After the first civilities, he demanded who I was; whence I came; what cause had determined me to land on the island of Formosa, &c. I replied to his questions in short, that I was a General of a kingdom, who, having been made prisoner of war, had effected my escape with a party of my people to return to my own country; that having found the island of Formosa on my way, I anchored on the coast to procure water; but that the cruelty exercised by the two nations towards my companions, had demanded vengeance, which I had satisfied, and was preparing to return to my country.

He replied by requesting me to defer my departure till the arrival of Huapo, who having heard such wonders of me, had determined to come in person to visit me; in consequence of which, he had been dispatched with a party of troops to defend me against my enemies. To this compliment I replied, that I was truly sensible of the good disposition of the prince; that I should be infinitely flattered by the honour of seeing him; and still more in rendering him every service in my power. That the precaution of sending his troops to defend me, was superfluous, as no force could have any effect upon me. To this declaration I added the most flattering compliments to the Bamini, to whom I immediately made a present of a beautiful sabre, which, however, he politely refused, by observing, that he could not accept it without the knowledge of his master. After this conversation, he regaled me with tea and tobacco, at the same

same time that at intervals, he caused betel and the areca nut to be presented to me, with a small quantity of lime, all which together I chewed, and found most execrable.

The habits of this General consisted of a long red pautalon\*, Chinese half boots, a white shirt, with a vest of black, and a red surplice, or outer garment, which had some buttons of coral, set in gold. His head was covered with a bonnet of straw, exceedingly pointed, and the upper extremity was ornamented with horse hair, dyed red. His arms consisted of a sabre, a lance, and a bow, with a quiver, containing twenty-five arrows. The troops who attended him were entirely naked, except a piece of blue cloth round their middle, and their arms were lances and bows.

According to the Report, seven wounded.

Wednesday, August the 31st. This day all our huts being finished, I landed all my people, and having raised two epaulements, I placed four pieces of cannon upon them, two on each flank of my camp. No more than eight men remained on board, as a guard.

Our repast was not of long duration. The Formosian General eat with astonishing rapidity, without speaking a word; and after he had devoured a quantity of rice, with some pieces of roast meat, he rose, and began to chew his betel, and smoke tobacco. As I was desirous of making my court to him, I followed his example, though my palate suffered for it. After dinner we walked round my camp. When we came near a battery, Bamini requested me to order some cannon shot to be fired. I immediately gave orders to fix a butt

\* The Pautalon is a close garment fitted to the body, and all of one piece from head to foot. T.

at five hundred paces distance, and pointed the pieces myself. At the second fire, the boat which the islanders had exposed as a butt, was broken in pieces; at which the Formosian General testified the greatest surprize. To increase his astonishment, I gave orders to my companions to take their arms, and fire at a plank at eighty paces distance. Very few of their shot missed; and as the plank was shot through, this exercise gave him great satisfaction, and induced him to spare no flattering expressions on the occasion.

About five in the evening, Bamini received a courier, who announced the approaching arrival of the Huapo. The General therefore left me, and went to prepare a camp. I embraced this opportunity to give orders for some fire-works; and at the same time give the Prince the diversion of seeing our military exercise. The islanders, in the mean time, had become so familiar with us, as to leave their daughters freely in our camp; and it is remarkable, that there was no instance of any pilfering committed by them, though our people were exceedingly negligent. I employed the night in making several different fuses, and a large serpent for the fire-works.

At day-break, Don Hieronimo waited on me, to acquaint me with the arrival of the Prince, and advised me to send two of my officers to meet him, instead of going myself. As he offered to serve as their interpreter, I immediately sent Messrs. Crustiew and Kuzneczow, with six of our associates armed, to attend them. After their departure, I ascended an hill to see their camp prepared. I perceived that the arrangement was made after a certain order; the tent of the Prince being in the centre, and the others round about it. About eight o'clock, I saw the troops march in, and at last the Prince arrived.

Their

Their order was as follows : First came six horsemen, with a kind of standard. These were followed by a troop of infantry with pikes. After and these came thirty or forty horsemen, another body of infantry with bows. A troop armed with clubs and hatchets came next ; and last of all came the Prince, attended by twelve or fifteen officers, mounted on small, but beautiful horses. The rest of the troops came after without any regular order. On their arrival at the camp, every one lodged where he could, and there was no guard set.

About eleven o'clock, Don Hieronimo returned to invite me, in the name of the Prince, to come and see him ; and he brought several horses, though the distance was very short. I immediately mounted, and soon arrived at the Prince's tent. His appearance struck me at first sight. He was between thirty and thirty-five years of age, about five feet three inches high, of a strong and vigorous make, with a lively eye and majestic carriage. Upon being introduced to him, I found Mr. Cruftiew already in great familiarity with him ; who said to me in Russian, this youth would do our business, if we proposed to remain at Formosa ; and his good disposition would permit him to assure me, that I might be King of the island whenever I pleased. He had scarcely spoken, when the Prince addressed me by our interpreter, assuring me, that I was welcome on the island ; and that he had heard, with the greatest satisfaction, of the manner we had treated his enemies, for which he thought it proper to make his grateful acknowledgments. To this he added, that he had no doubt but that I was the person whose coming was announced by the Prophets, who had foretold that a stranger should arrive with strong men, who should deliver the Formosans from the Chinese yoke :

yoke : in consequence of which he had determined to pay me a visit, and make me an offer of all his power and forces to support and obey me. This commencement changed my system, and the Spaniard insensibly led me to play a new part, by assuring the Huapo that I was a great Prince, who had visited Formosa, with the intention of satisfying myself concerning the position of the Chinese, and to fulfil the wishes of the inhabitants of the island, by delivering them from the power of that treacherous people.

Upon this information, I thanked the Prince for his good intentions, and assured him that I should always make it a part of my glory to contribute to the happiness of a nation who were so fortunate as to be governed by a Prince of such wisdom and penetration as himself. But that upon the present occasion, having come only for the purpose of contracting alliances with the natives of the island, and more especially with the Huapo, I should explain myself more at large on another occasion ; as these affairs and interests required to be treated of in secret. The Prince appeared to be satisfied with this reply, and invited me to dine with him. Messrs. Crustiew and Kuzneczow were likewise of the party, as well as the Spaniard, whom the Prince took into favour, and caused him to be immediately clothed after the fashion of the country ; at the same time that he gave him a belt and a sash, as marks of distinction.

After dinner, the Prince proposed to visit my camp, and while our horses were getting ready, Mr. Crustiew went before, to prepare the men to render due honour to the Prince, who was attended by near fifty officers on horseback, and his whole body of troops following him at the distance of about three hundred paces. When we came in sight of our camp, the cannonade began, and the  
astonished

astonished Sovereign was in great danger of sharing the fate of his officers, most of whom were thrown by the frisks and leaps of their horses, who were not accustomed to the noise, and could not be made to advance. We therefore dismounted, and arrived at the camp, where the associates saluted the Prince with three discharges of musquetry, and the ceremony ended with twenty guns from the ship. This honourable and noisy reception gave him infinite pleasure, and as a mark of friendship, he put his hand in mine, and in this manner we proceeded to my tent, followed to my tent, followed only by his General and three officers. He soon resumed his discourse, by giving a detail of the reasons, which made him desirous of driving the Chinese out of the island; and he left me no reason to doubt, that vanity induced him to declare war upon them. His inclination, in this respect, would certainly have been highly advantageous to me, if I had proposed to remain in the country; but as my determination was to return as speedily as possible into Europe, I thought it would be very unsafe to engage in enterprizes, which, even on the most happy event, would not make my return the less necessary. But, on the other hand, being well convinced, that by an alliance with this Prince, I should be enabled to propose the establishment of a colony on the island to some European power, I resolved to do every thing in my power to preserve his favourable disposition towards me.

About four in the evening, the Prince expressed a desire to see the vessel: I accordingly ordered thirty of my companions to go on board immediately; and afterwards sent Mr. Crustiew to attend him, with directions to amuse him as long as possible, that I might have time to prepare my fireworks. All was ready at half past seven, when I  
conducted

conducted the Prince to a place where he might see the whole fire, which began after the discharge of three great guns. He expressed his admiration at this exhibition, but informed me that the Chinese made the same. When the fireworks were ended, the Prince retired, after giving me his belt and sabre, as a token that he would share with me his power over his army, which amounted to eight thousand men, of whom only two hundred and sixty were horsemen.

As soon as the Prince was gone, I assembled a committee, in which I declared Mr. Stephanow our equal, and capable of being admitted to our confidence; and I gave orders to Mr. Cruftiew, to acknowledge him as such before the whole company. At the same time I gave directions for preparing the presents for the Prince Huapo, which consisted of two pieces of cannon I had brought as ballast, thirty good muskets, six barrels of gunpowder, two hundred iron balls, and fifty pounds of match. At day-break, I detached Messrs. Cruftiew, Wyndbladth, and Kuzneczow, to inform the Prince of the presents; to which I added thirty common Japanese sabres, one sabre very elegantly wrought for himself, and twenty others for his principal officers.

About eight o'clock, Don Hieronimo came to announce a visit on the part of the Prince, who came attended only by his confidential officers, as well to receive the presents, as to treat with me on objects of the greatest importance. About ten he arrived, and as I had the whole intermediate time to converse with, and make enquiries of the good Spaniard, I had my answers in readiness. In the first place, the Prince caused a very magnificent tent to be erected near mine, in which very rich carpets were laid; and here it was that he received me. He began the conversation, by thank-  
ing

ing me for the presents which he had accepted on my part, and then proceeded to make the following demands :

1. Whether I could leave part of my people behind to remain with him till my return ?

2. Whether I could bring back a number of troops armed with muskets, and skilled in the management of cannon ; and what would be the expence of maintaining one thousand men ?

3. Whether I could procure for him vessels armed with cannon, and captains to command them ?

4. Whether I would accept the concession he would make me of the province of Havangsin ; which, with its cities, towns, and inhabitants, he would cede to me in propriety, on condition that I should support him with Europeans, until he should have driven the Chinese out of his dominions, at which period he would yield up to me his whole kingdom ?

5. And lastly, whether I would assist him in an expedition he was going to make against one of his neighbours, on condition that he should allow me a certain sum, with other advantages ?

6. That after having received my answer, he should propose to me to enter into a permanent treaty of friendship with him ?

These questions appeared to me, to be the work of Don Hieronimo ; though he would never acknowledge that they sprung from his brain.—My answer was as follows :

1. That having a very long voyage to make, I could not leave any of my people behind me.

2. That it was in my power to bring armed troops and cannon along with me ; but that the transport of one thousand men, would cost one thousand five hundred pounds of gold ; and the maintainance of such a body of troops, would cost yearly, five hundred pounds of gold.

3. That

3. That I could procure armed vessels, such as he demanded; but that each vessel of twenty guns, would cost fifty pounds of gold.

4. That I should accept the commission of the province of Havangsin, such as he was desirous of bestowing it; on condition that I should support him against the Chinese, until they were driven out of his dominions; and that he should vest the property of his kingdom in me.

5. That though the season pressed my departure, yet, with a view to testify my attachment to the Prince Huapo, I should be ready to assist him in his military operations, without demanding any recompence, except what he should voluntarily please to bestow upon my companions.

6. That I was ready to conclude a treaty of friendship with him, and hoped, that, provided he acted with as much sincerity as myself, I should soon see him sovereign of the whole island of Formosa, and in a situation to avenge himself and family on the Emperor of China, for the persecutions they had formerly suffered from that potentate.

The Prince having listened with the greatest attention to my replies, caused them to be written upon a paper, on which I perceived that his demands were likewise written. He then caused the question to be put to me, whether my resolution was invariable; and upon my answering in the affirmative, he proposed to make the ceremony of the oath; to which I consented with all my heart. During the time the preparations were making, I embraced the opportunity of presenting him with a sabre, and a pair of choice pistols. I did the same to his Generalissimo, and begged he would distribute the others to the most distinguished officers of the army.

Soon

Soon afterwards the Prince informed me that all was in readiness, and went out with me. We approached a small fire, upon which we threw several pieces of wood. A censer was then given to me, and another to him. These were filled with lighted wood, upon which we threw incense; and turning towards the East, we made several fumigations. After the ceremony, the General read the questions, and my answers; and whenever he paused, we turned towards the East, and repeated the fumigation. At the end of the reading, the Prince pronounced imprecations and maledictions upon him who should break the treaty of friendship between us; and Don Hieronimo directed me to do the same, and afterwards interpreted my words. After this we threw our fire upon the ground, and thrust our sabres in the ground up to the hilts. The assistants immediately brought a quantity of large stones, with which they covered our arms, and the Prince then embraced me, and declared that he acknowledged me as his brother.

On our return to his tent, he caused a complete habit, made according to the fashion of the country, to be brought, with which I was cloathed; and in this manner we set out for the camp of the Prince, where we were received with every demonstration of joy. On our arrival at his tent, dinner was served up in a more plentiful manner than usual; and as the Prince had requested the company of my officers, I caused them all to attend, except Mr. Baturin, who commanded in my absence. During the whole time of our meal, our ears were stunned with a very noisy kind of music, and the continued beating of drums. At our rising from table, I was not a little surprized to see the two pieces of cannon planted at the entrance of the camp. But Mr. Wyndbladth informed  
me,

me, that my associates had paid the Prince the compliment of placing them there ; at which he was exceedingly well satisfied. At four o'clock, all the principal officers being assembled, with the Bamini at their head, the Prince spoke to them for a long time ; and after having ended his discourse, he dismissed them. Half an hour afterwards, the Prince and myself accompanied by the Spaniard, mounted our horses, and passed through the camp ; where I was saluted by all the officers. The manner of salutation consisted in each officer touching with his left hand, the stirrup of him whom he saluted. When we had made several turns in the camp, we returned to the Prince's tent, who urged me to come to a determination to accompany him in his enterprize ; and, as I had resolved to assist him, I thought it proper to make some enquiries into the subject. The information I received was as follows : The Prince Hapuasingo, Sovereign of a neighbouring territory, who was allied and tributary to the Chinese, had demanded, in consequence of a private quarrel of individuals, that Huapo should put several of his own subjects to death ? and as Huapo did not chuse to comply with his wishes, he made war upon him, in which Huapo was not successful, but was constrained at last to pay a considerable fine to Hapuasingo : and though he had fulfilled the treaty, yet the Chinese Governor demanded a further reimbursement, on pretence of the expences he had been at in bringing his troops into the field ; and upon this plea the Chinese, with the assistance of Hapuasingo, had usurped one of his finest and most fertile provinces. That, considering the present as a favourable moment to avenge himself on his neighbour, and the Chinese, he hoped, by my assistance, to bring his wishes to a happy termination. He informed me, moreover, that the army of Hapuasingo did not consist of above five or six thousand men ; and that the number of Chinese who could come to his assistance, were about one thousand,

thousand, of which no more than fifty were armed with muskets. That the distance of Hapuafingo's capital was not more than a day and a half's march from the place we were then at; and that the roads were very good.

Upon this information, I promised my ally to maintain his quarrel, and required no more than one day to get ready, and sixty horses for my companions and their equipage. My promise transported the Prince with the greatest joy, and induced him to declare Don Hieronimo his General of cavalry. I thanked him for this mark of confidence; but as I had need of him near me to serve as an interpreter, I begged the Prince to cause him to be declared in the mean time a principal officer, bearing the Prince's orders and mine, which were necessary to be implicitly obeyed. The Prince promised that every thing should be done according to my desire; and then I quitted him, to return to my camp with the Spaniard. Immediately on my return, I assembled my intimate friends, to whom I explained my interests and intention, which was supported by the assurance of our being able to establish a colony hereafter on this island, under the guarantee and friendship of the Prince Huapo. But as it was of the utmost importance that the company should consent, I directed my friends to excite them to make a request to me to carry his project into execution. At day-break, the effect of this stratagem exceeded my expectation. When I came out of my tent, or rather barrack, I saw two deputies, who, in the name of the company, requested me to permit a certain number of them to assist the good Prince Huapo in his war against the Chinese. On this message I assembled the company, to whom I represented, that I thought it improper to comply with their demand, because it was an absurdity for us to interfere on  
such

such flight grounds in this quarrel, so much as to send some of our number to assist in the enterprize. That an undertaking of this kind might effectually destroy all our hopes respecting the island, as it would be sufficient for this purpose, that the Prince Huapo might be beaten. My speech altered the countenance of my companions; but I soon revived their spirits, by declaring, that I was no less sensible than themselves, of the importance of the services we might render to Huapo; but as I was convinced that our whole reputation in the place depended on this measure, I begged them to chuse forty resolute men of their number, with whom I would myself go upon this expedition. On this declaration they demanded to cast lots, and assured me, that they unanimously approved of my determination. I therefore left the care of regulating the lots to Mr. Cruftiew, and nominated the officers myself, as follow :

<i>The Left.</i>	<i>The Center.</i>	<i>The Right.</i>
Mr. Kuzneczow,	Myself,	Mr. Wyndbladth,
Mr. Bocfarew,	Mr. Stephanow,	Mr. Baturin,
13 Associates.	Mr. Sibaew,	13 Associates.
—	16 Associates.	—
15	—	15
	18	

After having declared and fixed this order, I caused ammunition to be distributed, and ordered four patereros, which belonged to the shallop, to be got ready, with sixty rounds of ball, and twenty of rubbish for each; and with a view that these pieces might be more effectually serviceable, I caused piquets to be shod with iron to drive into the ground, and provided each with a socket at top to fix the piece. This commission was very ingeniously performed by Mr. Baturin. About ten we received sixty horses; but as eight more were

wanting to transport our patereros and ammunition, I dispatched Don Hieronimo, who brought them. This day we dined all together; and after having placed the command, in my absence, in the hands of Mr. Cruftiew, and Messrs. Gurcsinin, Meder, and Czurin under him, I took my leave of them.

Thursday, September the 1st, 1771\*. On the island of Formosa, marching to assist the Prince Huapo in his war. At four, P. M. I entered the camp of the Prince, who immediately struck his tents, and prepared to follow me, after having appointed one hundred and twenty horsemen, and four hundred infantry to clear the way. We did not halt till eleven o'clock, near a brook called Halavith. At four in the morning we renewed our march; and at seven Don Hieronimo, as we were descending a mountain, made me take notice of a small town belonging to Huapo; but as we left it near a league distant on the right, I could not judge of its extent with any precision. Its environs, however, seemed to be well cultivated. At nine we halted to refresh our horses, whom they fed with rice; and, after having pitched our camp on the border of a wood, we remained there till four in the afternoon, to avoid marching in the noon-day heat, which was extreme.

Friday, September the 2d. At four in the afternoon, we resumed our march, and continued

\* Here is an inadvertence of the Count, with regard to time. Under the date of August the 31st, are included the adventures of three whole days, as appears by the succession of the hours. It seems probable, that during his stay on shore, he kept minutes of the principal events, and afterwards divided them into day's transactions by memory; and that the present date should be September the 3d; a supposition, which, by including the three following days in one, agrees very well with the Prince's assertion, (page 48.) that Hapuasingo's capital was distant only a journey of one day and a half.

our progress till ten at night ; at which time we stopped in a valley, where we received twenty oxen loaded with rice, a quantity of fruit, and several casks of a kind of brandy. At three in the morning we set out again, and continued till nine, when we came to a village with a pond of water near it, in which we caught some excellent fish. As I found this village abandoned by its inhabitants, I imagined it belonged to the enemy ; and the information I received from the Spaniard, confirmed this opinion. From this, I had no doubt, but that Hapuafingo was apprized of our invasion ; and for that reason I should have been glad to have conversed with the Prince. And as he only followed me at the distance of a march, I thought it proper to wait for him.

Saturday, September the 3d. Encamped near a deserted village. The Prince Huapo did not appear till near five o'clock. I took the liberty to remonstrate with him for his slowness ; which he excused, by representing, that his troops being loaded with provisions, could not march so quickly. At three in the morning we resumed our march ; and at half past four, being in the van with Don Hieronimo, we observed thirty or forty horsemen before us. I immediately advanced with six associates, and the Spaniard. They paid no attention to us till they supposed us to be in their reach ; and then, turning about, they came on full gallop, with their lances in their hands. Their courage was, however, not a little disconcerted, by the first report of our fire arms, which dismounted two of them, whom we made prisoners. From them we learned, by the examination of Don Hieronimo, that we should soon see the main army advancing towards us ; and that we were then at no greater distance from the capital than a six hours march.

The rest of my troops having joined me, we continued our march without seeing any thing remarkable, except some villages on our right and left, and a prodigious quantity of cattle. As we were now very near the enemy, I pitched my camp to advantage, and fixed my patereros for its defence. About noon we perceived a troop of about an hundred horse, who approached to examine us at leisure; which I permitted, with the intention of familiarizing them with us.

Sunday, September the 4th. At two o'clock we observed another body of upwards of fifty-horsemen on our right; and at last, a great number of troops, amounting at least to ten or twelve thousand men, but very few cavalry. As I made no movement, these troops began to prepare for the attack; and at the same time I put my men in readiness to keep up a continued fire. I was desirous of working the patereros myself; and for that reason had them brought near the center. About half past three, a party of about twenty horse approached to insult an out-post which I had set. As soon as they came within reach, I fired a few shot at them, which had no other effect than that of intimidating them. They soon, however, recovered from their apprehensions, and disposed their whole troop to attack me; but their reception was so warm, that near two hundred were slain. This loss, instead of checking their impetuosity, appeared to increase their fury. They came on a second time; and, after very considerable loss, were forced at last to retreat. I pursued them for two hours, when the approach of night obliged me to halt.

The Prince did not come up with us till eleven, and a council was held, wherein it was determined to attack the enemy in our turn. At two I disposed our troops in order, and placed a division of my

my comrades on each wing, and myself, with my own division occupied the center. At three we marched towards the enemy; and when we had arrived very near them, we waited only for the break of day to commence the attack. At three quarters after four the attack began; but the noise of our patereros and muskets was sufficient to put them to flight. This loss was so much the more considerable, as they had no thought of providing for a retreat. The greatest number retired into the town. The spirit of the troops of Huapo likewise carried them before us, in which situation the enemy, no longer intimidated by our fire arms, turned upon them, and began a dreadful slaughter, which however ceased at our approach, as soon as we could make use of our arms.

While the battle began in the city, Don Hieronimo proposed to send fifty horse to the other side of the town, to prevent Hapuasingo from escaping. I immediately gave orders for twenty of my associates, under Messrs. Stephanow and Baturin, to perform this office; and they were so fortunate as to make Hapuasingo prisoner, with four of his women, with whom he was endeavouring to make his escape. This capture decided the whole quarrel; for he promised to Don Hieronimo to comply with all the demands of Huapo, on condition the lives of himself and family should be spared. When he came before me, I declared that he was my prisoner; and that so far from being desirous of putting him to death, I should wish to cultivate his friendship, on condition of his giving every satisfaction to Huapo, who was justly irritated. About eleven, all the noise of war having subsided, I caused enquiry to be made after Huapo, in order to put Hapuasingo into his hands: but as this Prince was desirous of being a spectator, instead of an actor, he did not return till about noon; at

which time I delivered Hapuafingo to him, on condition that he should not suffer any personal injury : and then I thought proper to encamp on the other side of the town.

Monday, September the 5th. In camp, near the Town of Xiaguamay, on the island of Formosa. At three, I received a visit from Huapo, accompanied with Bamini, who overwhelmed me with protestations of friendship ; and, as I understood that all the operations of war were ended, I declared to the Prince my resolution to return, and set sail, as early as possible ; this information was very unpleasant to him ; but as he was convinced that he should not succeed in attempting to dissuade me from my purpose, he contented himself with entreating me to return as soon as possible, which I solemnly promised to do. This day we regulated the order of my departure ; and the manner in which the province was to supply me with provisions, pursuant to the order of the Prince. In the evening, Don Hieronimo requested me to leave one of my companions behind to assist him in his functions. On his pressing entreaty, I persuaded young Loginow, whose brother had been slain, to fix his residence here till my return, in order to learn the language of the country, and assist our future operations.

The next morning I received the Prince's presents, consisting of some fine pearls, eight quintals of silver, and twelve pounds of gold. He apologized for the smallness of the present, on account of his distance from home, and because my precipitate departure prevented his making it more considerable. But with regard to myself, he sent me a box, containing one hundred pieces of gold, weighing in the whole thirteen pounds and a quarter ; and gave orders to Bamini to accompany us with one hundred and twenty horsemen, to provide

vide for our subsistence. Don Hieronimo likewise attended me as interpreter; and I gave orders for our departure at four in the afternoon.

Tuesday, September the 6th. After renewing our oaths and engagements with the Prince Huapo, we took our leave at three; and I had the satisfaction to see, that he did not part with us without tears. At four we began our march; and at the moment that my troop filed off, I made the Prince a present of my patereros, with the greatest part of the ammunition we had brought; at the same time, that I requested the favour that he would appoint our companion Loginow, who staid behind, his General of artillery. This he promised in his presence. Our march was very easy and pleasant; for we were mounted on good horses, and went by the most direct road; and we were plentifully supplied with provision of all kinds, at the places where we halted.

Wednesday, September the 7th. We continued our march through a pleasant and well cultivated country, watered with fine rivers, and very populous, as we could judge by the small distance from one village to another. Whenever we rested, we were surrounded by a multitude of people, who brought presents. Their good will was, however chargeable to us by the returns we made. This day I made an offer to Bamini, of part of the gold and silver I had received of the Prince; but he positively refused to accept it, saying, that he was contented in possessing my friendship, which he begged I would preserve till my return.

Thursday, September the 8th. At three, P. M. we at length arrived at our camp very much fatigued, and exhausted with the excessive heat we had suffered, as there had been no rain during the whole of our excursion. General Bamini, after having given the necessary orders to the chief inhabitants

habitants of the country respecting our subsistence, took leave of me. He embraced all my associates one after the other; and at the instant of his departure, he put into my hands a collar of pearls on the part of the Prince, and a rich tent, with a carpet of superior workmanship.

After the departure of Bamini, I received the congratulations of my companions, and saw with the greatest satisfaction, that Mr. Crustiew had disposed of every thing in the best manner. In the evening, being desirous of giving my companions a mark of liberality, I distributed among them the whole of the silver and gold by weight; and I put the pearls and the box of gold, which had been privately given me, into the hands of my intimate friends, the officers and women. When the associates were informed, that I had kept nothing for myself, they proposed each to give me a half share of their possessions; but I refused, and begged them to preserve the whole, and to reserve their generous disposition for some future occasion, if I should find it necessary to apply to them for assistance; in which case I should not scruple to have recourse to them for a loan.

This conduct on my part seemed to elevate their minds, and gave me a perfect empire over them. And at this moment I was convinced, that though a man of genius may avail himself of his superiority over common minds, yet, an act of generosity at a proper time, is worth a thousand speeches, however eloquent.

After the company had separated, none remained but my intimate friends, who endeavoured to persuade me to fix my residence at Formosa, in the province which the Prince Huapo had ceded to me. They represented, that the associates being this day witnesses of the mildness of my command, and guided by the most profound respect  
towards

towards me, would be sufficient to form a colony ; and that we might besides send, by the way of China, at some future time, certain emissaries into Europe, to engage some sovereign power in our interests ; or, at all events, to raise recruits. Their opinions were so well supported, that at last I could make no other objection, than my own peculiar interests ; namely, that I had a wife who loved and was attached to me by the bond of marriage, and who probably at that instant had a child, as she was pregnant at the time of my departure. But, in order to conceal my own private sentiments, though I communicated as much to them as I thought necessary, I did not fail to represent, that a person on the spot could do more than a thousand written messages ; and that, therefore, upon my return to Europe, I might reasonably expect to obtain the favour of some court, as we could assure them the greatest advantages ; such as that of forming an establishment in the Aleuthes islands, to carry on the rich commerce of furs ; to open the trade of Japan ; to form an establishment on the islands Lequeio ; and lastly, to establish an European colony on the island of Formosa. I expressed my firm assurance, that these propositions would insure our happy success ; and that in case the European courts should abandon us, we should always have it in our power to carry our project into execution, by the fitting out of private vessels. This reasoning at last determined them, and they requested permission to explain it to the whole company ; for they assured me, that every individual was resolved to demand my consent, not to quit the island of Formosa.

After having gained this essential point, I retired to rest, which was very necessary to me ; and did not awake till ten the next morning. When I arose, I received the deputies of the company, who,

who, having been informed by Mr. Cruftiew of my intention, had paid respect to it, though they had already made a different determination themselves; for which reason they confined their request to that of desiring that I would not quit the island until the 12th of the month, in order that they might have time to recover themselves from the fatigues and difficulties they had undergone. I granted their request with so much the more readiness, as in reality the fatigue of our march had been excessive, and the good conduct of my companions was such as led me to comply with every request they might make. I therefore promised to remain on the island until the 12th; and my consent was followed by expressions of the most lively gratitude on their part. This day the whole company dined together.

Friday, September the 9th. After dinner, I gave orders for putting an end to all work, that all the associates might follow their recreations, except a guard of six on board, and four on shore. The officers likewise seized this opportunity to make some excursions into the country; and, for my part, I employed myself in drawing up some notes respecting the project of forming a colony on the island. These were as follow:

Some notions and details respecting the island of Formosa; and the plan of forming an European colony there.

The island of Formosa is called by the Chinese, Touaiouai; and by the natives Paccahimba. It is one of the finest and richest islands of the known world. The soil, in an infinity of places, produces two harvests of rice and other grain, with a great variety of trees, fruits, plants, animals, and birds. Cattle, sheep, goats, and poultry, are very abundant here. This island is intersected by great rivers, lakes, and waters, abounding with fish. It has

has many commodious harbours, bays, and sounds on its coasts. Its mountains produce gold, silver, cinnabar, white and brown copper; and likewise pit coal.

The island of Formosa is divided into eight principalities, three of which, situated on the Western side, are governed by the Chinese, and peopled by the same nation. Every year an Ambassador arrives from China, to receive tribute from these three provinces, which is raised by a poll tax; and the Emperor of China keeps five hundred vessels for the purpose of annually exporting this tribute, which consists of a large quantity of rice, wheat, millet, salt, beans, raw silk, cotton, gold, silver and mercury. The Governors of these three provinces continually extend their possessions, either by alliance or intrigue, in such a manner, that they have obtained several towns and districts from their neighbours.

The inhabitants of the island are civilized, except those who live on the Eastern coasts. They are of an effeminate disposition, without any marks of courage; given to indolence, and are indebted to the goodness of the climate for their preservation, as the soil supports them with very little labour. If we except the three Chinese provinces, the mines on the island are no where worked. They are contented to wash the sand to extract gold out of it; and if they find pearls in the shells, it is by mere accident. The common people of Formosa are clothed only in blue cotton cloth; the towns are always built in the plains; and the villages are upon the mountains. The houses of people of condition among them are extensive and beautiful, but plain. Those of the people are mere huts; and they are not permitted to build better. Most of them are covered with straw and reeds, and are divided or separated from each other by rows of pallisadoes;

pallifadoes; their moveables are nothing more than what necessity has rendered indispensable. In the houses of men of rank, there are advanced rooms, in which they eat, receive strangers, and divert themselves. The apartments of the women are always separate, and apart from the house. Though they are built within the court, no one is permitted to approach them. In this country there are no inns for travellers; but those who are on a journey seat themselves down near the first house they come to, and the master of the house soon after receives them, and entertains them with rice and some flesh meat, with tobacco and tea.

The only commerce of the inhabitants of Formosa is with some Japanese barks, who touch here, and with the Chinese.

In each province there are five or six towns, which have establishments for instructing youth in reading and writing. Their characters of writing, and for the expression of numbers, are as difficult as those of the Chinese. Their pronunciation is sometimes quick and elevated, and at other times slow and grave. They obtain their books from China. There are reputed forcerers or diviners here, who have a great influence over the people. Their religion consists in adoring one God, and in the performance of good offices to their neighbours. The provinces which are not conquered, are governed by Princes or Kings, who have an absolute power over their subjects. None of these last, without any exception of the great men, has any property in the lands. They receive the advantages of their lands, subject to the good pleasure of the Prince, as well as the gains they derive from the multitude of their slaves. Some of the principal people have as many as one, or even two thousand. The princes always compose their councils of their principal military officers, and always keep their troops on foot, divided into four, five, and six divisions, which

which remain constantly on the frontiers; the body guard of the Sovereigns consists of no more than five or six hundred men, born of the principal families among their subjects. The ancient soldiers are employed in the command of towns or villages, for there is no village in Formosa which is not commanded by a soldier, and each commander is obliged to present annually to his superior, a list of the people under his jurisdiction. Formosa being surrounded by the sea, these princes constantly maintain a certain number of vessels, each of which has two masts and twenty-four oars; they do not use cannon, but make great use of artificial fire works.

A plan for forming a colony on the island Formosa.

Previous to entering into the project of establishing a colony, it will be necessary to mention a few maxims.

1. Before any attempt is made to found a colony, it must be previously considered, whether its establishment be intended to be made upon a military or mercantile footing; and whether it be properest to cultivate the commerce of exchange, of œconomy, or of industry?

2. In the formation of a colony, it is necessary to conciliate the benevolence, the confidence, and the attachment of the natives of the country. When a superiority is acquired over their minds, their own proper impulses will render the colonists masters of the country; and in this case it will be easy to establish the constitution intended to be adopted, or to set on foot that kind of commerce which is proposed. The constitution may likewise be maintained with very little force, and the country defended against the attempts of foreigners.

3. It is necessary that the basis of the colony be military, animated by glory; for in that case it may conquer, but will never be conquered.

4. The

4. The salubrity of the place of establishment must be ascertained, and no labour neglected that may tend to procure this advantage so necessary to humanity.

5. It is required to make sure of the possession of good harbours, fertile grounds, and the course of the principal rivers, to comprehend all the branches of commerce; to carry cultivation to its utmost extent; and to facilitate by these two branches the different departments of industry.

6. In an infant colony it is proper to avoid fortifications of the first order, and to establish the chief place in the inner part of the country; where, consequently, it will be out of the reach of any sudden stroke. In this manner, when a colony is master of the country, the first attack of an enemy, and the capture of a post, established near the sea coast, will not decide the possession.

7. The multiplicity of councils, and the number of people employed, must be reduced to the smallest number, which can be dispensed with in the management of the affairs of the colony.

8. Luxury must be banished; but it will be proper to establish external marks of grandeur, according to the different ranks of citizens who form the colony; as by this means emulation will be encouraged.

9. Industry must be encouraged and recompensed by gradual transition from one class of citizens to another, and by procuring to the colonists the sale of their commodities. The money which is thus dispersed among the colonists in the purchase of productions, always returns to government in the course of exchanges.

10. Restraint of conscience must be banished and prohibited for ever. Happy is he who shall establish toleration, and the belief of one only God.

11. A code of laws ought to be established in favour of slavery; in which, means should be appointed to enable this unfortunate order of men to arrive, by the force of labour and industry, to the rank of free citizens.

12. Population being the only true foundation of national force, it will be necessary that government should encourage it by rewards, and preserve it by law. It will succeed by punishing libertinism severely, and by granting privileges and gratifications to fathers and mothers, who shall have presented a number of children, the issue of their marriages.

It is therefore on these principles that I should wish to establish a colony on the island of Formosa, supposing that an European power should accept my offers.

1. I should demand, that this power should confine itself to the Suzerainty; and, on this principle, it should possess no other advantages but such as are derived from subsidies, and the commerce of its European subjects.

2. Conformably to this plan, I should require three armed vessels; one of four hundred and fifty tons, another of two hundred and fifty tons, and another of one hundred and fifty tons, with provisions for eighteen months.

3. And likewise permission to raise a body of workmen, of different kinds, to the number of twelve hundred men, with the necessary officers whom I should chuse.

4. That I should be furnished with a necessary quantity of arms, ammunition, and the value of one million two hundred thousand livres, in articles of trade, which I should point out.

5. That for the space of three years, permission should be granted me to raise recruits to the number of four hundred men yearly, and the transport  
of

of two hundred foundling children of both sexes annually.

6. That permission should be granted to all the subjects of the sovereign power to trade with the new colony.

7. That permission should be granted me to establish warehouses and factories in its colonies.

These articles being granted, I would stipulate,

1. That the new colony should furnish a certain sum of money annually, to the power who had protected it, as a grateful acknowledgment.

2. That the colony should assist its protector in every war, by furnishing a stipulated number of soldiers and seamen.

3. That no merchandize, or objects of European luxury, should be admitted into the new colony, except the product or manufacture of the dominions of its protector.

4. That the whole sum advanced in fitting out armed vessels, with the ammunition and objects of commerce, on account of the new colony, should be entered into a regular charge; that the interest should be paid during the first three years, and the capital reimbursed during the fourth.

These stipulations being thus fixed, I would repair to port Maurice, where, conformably to the treaty entered into with the Prince Huapo, I would disembark; and, after having established a military post, I would repair to the capital of the province which has been ceded to me.

Saturday, September the 10th. The associates came to work of themselves, and began to load the vessel. This day Don Hieronimo entered into an oath with me before the whole company; in which he engaged to support the favourable disposition of the Prince towards me. I made him a present of several Latin books, and some arms.

Sunday,

Sunday, September the 11th. I gave orders for our embarkment, and the natives of the country assisted us with the utmost readiness, with every thing in their power. This day Mr. Stephanow asked leave to go on shore, which I durst not consent to, as I had reason to fear the wickedness of his character, which certainly might have destroyed all our credit and interest on this island. But as I was not desirous that the refusal should come from me, I promised to explain his wish to the company; and promised, that the moment they gave their consent, I would make no objection. I gave orders for the immediate calling together of the company on board, in the morning, to decide on this affair; but Stephanow was scarcely gone, before I assembled a committee, to whom I communicated his intention. Every individual, urged by the same motives as myself, opposed his purpose; and several among them undertook to induce the whole company to refuse him. I employed this night in writing out instructions for Don Hieronimo, and at day-break I went on board, accompanied by him. After I had taken a formal leave of the islanders, at ten I put a letter for the Prince Huapo, into the hands of Don Hieronimo, with instructions for Mr. Loginow, who at last took leave of us, and returned on shore. Immediately after his departure, the company assembled, and deliberated upon the proposition of Mr. Stephanow. Their determination was, that it was impossible to suffer any other person to go on shore; and more especially Mr. Stephanow, who had given so many proofs of his evil intentions. This unhappy man, urged by despair and rage, attempted to throw himself overboard; and by his outrageous deportment, obliged me, at length, to order him into confinement. In the mean time, we weighed anchor, and set sail under the two top-sails, with

the boats a-head, as well as five or six of the country boats, who were ready to come to our assistance, as the road was difficult.

According to the Report, all the company in good health, the vessel making no water.

Monday, September the 12th. A light breeze at E. S. E. with fair clear weather. When we had got to the mouth of the harbour, it fell calm; which obliged me to tow the vessel out by the boats, where I anchored in sixteen fathom water. At sun-set the wind sprung up at S. E. and I set sail, and stood to the Northward, in order to double the Northernmost extremity of the island of Formosa. In the night the wind slackened, and we saw many fires on shore. At eight, A. M. we discovered two islands a-head, with a channel between them of sufficient extent, to induce me to sail through it. At eleven, saw a large vessel at the distance of three leagues to the Northward, and prepared to chase her; but finding she outailed us, I gave up the attempt.

According to the Report, all in good health. The ship making no water.

Latitude in  $24^{\circ} 15' N.$  Longitude in  $324^{\circ} 08'.$   
Wind S. E. Current from S. to N. Course N. N. E.

Tuesday, September the 13th. Fine weather, inclining to squally. This day Mr. Stephanow was released from confinement; and I declared to the company, my resolution to direct our course to Macao. In the night the weather was moderate, and we continued our course very agreeably.

According to the Report, all in good health.

Latitude in  $25^{\circ} 15' N.$  Longitude in  $323^{\circ} 56'.$   
Wind S. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  E. Current from S. to N. Course N.  $\frac{1}{4}$  E.

Wednesday, September the 14th. Squally weather. Saw a quantity of water-snakes. In the night,

night, continual rain, with thunder and lightning. founded several times, but got no ground.

According to the Report, all well.

Latitude in  $24^{\circ} 41'$  N. Longitude  $322^{\circ} 00'$ .  
Wind S. E. Current from N. to S. Course S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  W.

Thursday, September the 15th. Close cloudy weather throughout, with heavy rain. At three, A. M. founded, and got ground at thirty fathoms, fine sand, and broken shells; and we observed a very strong current from N. to S. At day-break, saw a quantity of fishing boats around us. At nine, the coast of China was in sight, and I determined to go into some harbour. At ten, several fishing vessels being near us, offered to sell us some fish; and upon expressing our willingness, several canoes immediately came along side, from whom we bought all their fish for twelve piastres. Two Chinese among these fishermen, spoke a little Portuguese; and were at last persuaded to pilot us into Macao. They demanded for this service one hundred piastres; but in the mean time, requested leave to go on shore for their cloaths; to which I consented, on condition, that one only should go on shore, while the other remained on board. This agreement being made, they conducted us to an anchoring place; where we came to in eighteen fathom, fine sand and mud.

Friday, September the 16th. The pilot having returned on board, made me to understand his direction to weigh, and make sail along the coast, in order to put in at Tanafoa; and by way of explaining the reason, he said Mandarin hopchin malas, Mandarin tanajou bon bon malto bon; all which I made shift to comprehend wonderfully well. I therefore made sail without delay, and stood along-shore. At day-break, the pilot shewed me the bay of Tanafoa, into which we entered, and anchored

in five fathom water, opposite a castle, which I saluted with three guns, and received the same number in return. The pilot immediately went on shore, and did not return till ten o'clock, when he appeared, together with a Mandarin, and an interpreter. He demanded who I was; to what nation the ship belonged; where I came from, and whither I was bound? To this I replied, that I was an European, and one of the nobles of Hungary; that the vessel had belonged to the Russians, but having taken it from them, who were my enemies, it now belonged to myself; that I came from Kamchatka; was on my return to Europe, and proposed to put in at Macao. The Mandarin wrote my answers with a hair pencil, and said, he was surprized to see Hungarians arrive at China. He afterwards asked, what I was in want of; and being told that I wanted fresh provisions, he consented that a party of my companions should go on shore with the interpreters. I therefore availed myself of this permission, to send Messrs. Winbladth and Kuzneczow on shore, accompanied with six of our companions, to carry my presents to the Governor. They consisted in a beaver's skin, and two fables.

Saturday, September the 17th. At anchor at Tanafoa, before the town. At five, P. M. my officers returned, and brought word, that the Mandarin had accepted my presents with pleasure; and had sent me in return, a service of porcelain, with two chests of tea, six cows, and twelve hogs, with a quantity of poultry, and a kind of arrack. The associates brought an hundred different kinds of sweetmeats, and some toys, very nicely wrought. The interpreter acquainted me, that the Mandarin was desirous of purchasing some furs, but secretly; I therefore sent one hundred and fifty beavers, and three hundred fables; in return for which he sent  
six

six thousand eight hundred piastres, in three casks. Here I had additional cause to regret the loss of my furs. My companions likewise opened a trade with the inhabitants, and sold every scrap of bear's skin they could collect. In the night several Chinese vessels anchored near us, and my companions went on board them. They assured me, that every boat had several cabins, which were filled with girls, who sold their favours. A. M. Set up the rigging, and cleaned the ship thoroughly. My companions were incommoded by the quantity of fruit they eat on shore, and six of them were taken with illness.

Sunday, September the 18th. My pilot took notice that the wind was favourable, and that we ought to take advantage of it. I therefore set sail, and after standing off shore, I directed my course to the Southward, which was contrary to the wish of my pilot, who was absolutely averse to losing sight of the shore; the quantity of fishing boats we saw were innumerable; towards the evening they all made for the shore; and as I was importuned by my pilot, I consented to do the same. At day-break we saw many water-snakes around us, some of which I caused to be taken, and the pilot eat them. At nine it fell calm, and at noon our latitude was by observation,  $22^{\circ} 32'$ . Eighteen of our people were this day sick, which I attributed to the spirituous liquor they had drank.

Monday, September the 19th. The pilots enquired whether my vessel drew more than six feet of water; and when I informed them that she drew upwards of eight, they begged me to come to anchor; because at the fourth hour of the tide the depth of water at this place was eight or ten feet; the under current here was contrary to that at the surface; I therefore anchored, in compliance with their wishes, and I determined to note this observation

vation in my journal, in order that more skilful navigators might, at some future time, ascertain the fact. At six P. M. weighed with a light breeze at East, and the tide in our favour. This night one of the women who was attached to Mr. Csurin, was brought to-bed. The Chinese boats which furrounded us the whole night, made a considerable noise with their oars. At day-break we saw a fleet, at the head of which was a vessel of prodigious magnitude, almost entirely gilt, and hung round with numberless streamers. My pilots informed me that it was the Canton fleet, which carried the revenues to Peking. We counted one hundred and eighty-six vessels.

This day our sick amounted to no more than eight.

Tuesday, September the 20th. This day I was attacked by a violent fever, for which the pilots advised me to eat an orange, roasted in its juice, with sugar, and a good deal of ginger; they prepared this remedy for me, and it produced a strong perspiration, which dissipated my complaint. Messrs. Winbladth, Baturin, Gurcsinin, and Kuzneczow, with twelve others, were affected in the same manner. At eight, P. M. Mr. Sibaew acquainted me, that Mr. Stephanow taking advantage of my indisposition, had formed a party; but as he could not yet say what their intentions were, he promised to watch their motions. Sibaew had scarcely finished his discourse, before I heard a noise on board. I went out of my cabin, where I found Mr. Cruftiew engaged in a quarrel with Stephanow. I gave orders to seize the latter; and after receiving the information, that this wretch had proposed to the company, to sign an act of complaint against me, to be delivered to the Governor of Macao on our arrival, I ordered him to be

be put in irons. This day we had twenty-two sick.

Wednesday, September the 21st. About six, P. M. anchored among the islands, called Lardones, where we remained all night. At five, A. M. weighed, and at ten the pilots shewed me an island, which they called Omy; and at last made me understand, that Omy is the Chinese name for Macao. At half past eleven we saw the fort, and the Portuguese colours displayed. At noon, being opposite the fort, I saluted it with twelve guns.

Thursday, September the 22d. At half past one, P. M. we were fairly entering the harbour, where we saw several vessels at anchor. At two, in passing the pass, \* I was hailed to come to anchor; but as I did not think it necessary to lose time in superfluous ceremonies, I entered the harbour, and anchored at last, near a frigate of forty guns, in four fathoms water. As soon as I had brought to, I saluted the Admiral's colours with twenty-four guns, and he answered with twelve.

I went on shore immediately after, and passing near the Commodore, I paid him a visit. On my arrival at the Governor's, I was introduced into the hall, which I found full of priests and monks; among whom I perceived several negroes of the Canary islands. After some time, the Governor, M. de Saldagna, arrived, and received me with the greatest politeness. When I had acquainted him with my misfortunes and my deliverance, he gave me permission to hire houses in the town, to accommodate my people, till I could find a favourable opportunity of conveying them to Europe. Several persons of the magistracy, who were present, expressed some suspicions of me; for which

\* *Passant la basse*—I do not understand this. T.

reason.

reason, to prevent debates, I thought proper to put my vessel as a deposit, in the hands of the Governor; reserving only for each of my companions, the necessary arms, such as guns, pistols, and swords, which I likewise deposited in the castle. After this convention, the Governor charged M. Hifs, a gentleman of French extraction, but settled at Macao for some years, to assist me in my affairs, and serve as interpreter. At six, P. M. the guard having come on board, I caused all my people to go on shore. For the first day, my companions lodged in a public house, and the excess and avidity with which they devoured the bread and fresh provisions, which they were now supplied with, cost thirteen of them their lives. These died suddenly, and twenty-four others were seized with dangerous illness.

September the 23d. M. Hifs having found two convenient houses, I hired them, and went to reside in them with my companions. This day I dined with the Governor, in company with a number of priests, who from that moment aspired to the glory of converting my associates to the Roman religion. On my return home, I found all my people commodiously lodged, and an apartment compleatly fitted up for myself; the Governor having supplied the furniture out of his own house. I employed this day in making visits to the Bishop of Mitelopolis, the Procureur of the town, the different convents, and principal inhabitants. I likewise gave orders to clothe my companions uniformly, in red and white, as well as the officers; and the Portugueze ladies undertook to provide the apparel for our female fellow travellers. When the accounts were made up, these charges were estimated at eight thousand piastres, and the monthly expence for lodging and provisions, amounted to six thousand two hundred piastres.

On

On the 24th, I received visits from the Governor, and the principal men of the town, as well as from the Bishop, accompanied with the different religious orders : these all together, accompanied me to the Hoppo, or Chinese Governor, who regaled us with tea and sweetmeats : this day three more of my associates died, and their conversion was published throughout the town. In the evening, a Dominican priest, and friend of the Governor, named Zunitta, came to me, and offered every assistance in his power ; and as I thought I might dispose of my furs by his assistance, I proposed the business to him, and he consented to take them. I therefore put into his hands four hundred and eighty dozen ermines ; and he agreed to pay me for each beaver fifty piaftres, for each sable six piaftres, and for every dozen of ermines eight piaftres ; which produced the sum of twenty-eight thousand four hundred and forty piaftres : the whole, and only remains of so considerable a fortune, as I had brought from Kamchatka ! a scanty pittance, scarcely enough to pay the expences of putting into Macao.

This day, likewise, I gave orders to release Mr. Stephanow from his confinement, having received a formal apology on his part : the town made me, on the same day, a present of one thousand piaftres in gold, with forty-two pieces of blue cloth, and twelve pieces of black sattin : their present was accompanied with a request, that I would deposit a copy of my journal in their archives. I promised the deputies, that I would give them an historical extract, as I could not act so much to the prejudice of my own interests, as to deprive myself of the merit of my manuscripts : this day I dined with the Bishop of Mitelopolis, Mr. le Bon, of French extraction ; and I agreed with him that I would claim the protection of the French flag, for my  
passage

passage to Europe, in which he promised me his advice and assistance.

On the 25th, Miss Aphanasia paid the debt of nature. Her premature death affected me greatly, and more especially as it deprived me of the satisfaction of repaying her attachment, by her marriage with the young Popow, son of the Archimandrite, to whom I had given the surname of my family: this day I dispatched Mr. Cruftiew with letters to the Directors of the French Company, containing my reclamation of the protection of the colours of his Most Christian Majesty. He returned on the 29th, and brought me a very favourable answer, and the assurance of my passage, which news was very acceptable to me.

At Macao, October the 3d, 1771. A certain Mr. Gohr, Captain in the service of the English Company came to see me, and made me offer of services on the part of the Directors, and a free passage to Europe, provided I would bind myself to entrust my manuscripts to the Company, and engage to enter into their service, and make no communication of the discoveries I had made: this proposition, so evidently interested, disgusted me; but I was contented to answer, that I was very sensible of the obliging offer he had made; but that, as I had accepted those of the French Directors, it was not in my power to change my determination: that with respect to my entering into the service of the Company, it did not appear to me to be so easy; because it was not only necessary that I should be assured of a superior station, but that in the mean time all my people should be provided for; and that our common lot, and the execution of several projects should be secured. My answer surprized Mr. Gohr, who took his leave in an affected manner: the moment  
after

after his departure, I learned that Mr. Stephanow had accompanied him; and from thence I inferred, that I should still find new causes of discontent on his part, which accordingly happened, as will appear in the sequel.

On the 4th of October, I received a letter from Mr. L'Heureux, Director \* for the Dutch Company. He sent me a present of cloth, wine, beer, brandy, salt provisions, and two thousand piaftres. His letter and presents were accompanied with the offer of a passage for me to Batavia, and the assurance that I should be received into the Company's service. But, as he made the same proposal as the English, I refused the acceptance of his presents, except the liquors.

On the 6th, Mr. Jackson, an English merchant established at Macao, arrived with Mr. Beyz: they renewed the propositions made by Mr. Gohr, and shewed me full powers, signed by the English Council at Canton, to regulate the conditions of my engagement, and to offer a present of fifteen thousand guineas: the first *sine qua non* was, that the Company, in consideration of my consigning my manuscripts, and entering into their service, should grant me a pension of four thousand pounds sterling, reversible to my children; and that they should settle on each officer a pension of one hundred pounds, and each associate thirty pounds; and that they should give me every assistance in forming establishments beyond China. On this first condition the Plenipotentiaries acknowledged, that they had not sufficient authority to conclude with me, and retired, after begging that I would well consider their offers: this evening the Governor informed me, that the four English gentlemen had been with him, and that

\* Or Supercargo.

he thought several of my associates were gained by the English. In fact, these gentlemen, piqued at their want of success, raised embarrassments among my people, in which Mr. Stephanow was of wonderful service to them.

On the 12th, I received a letter from Mr. de Robien, Director of the French Company at Canton, wherein he informed me that two of the Company's ships, the Dauphin and the Laverdi, were ready to receive me and all my people on board: the same day Mr. Kuzneczow informed me, that he had discovered a plot, at the head of which was Stephanow, who had engaged to deliver my journals and papers to the English, for the sum of five thousand pounds sterling; and to prove the fact, he shewed me a letter of Mr. Jacksons, wherein that merchant asserted, that Messrs. Gohr, Hume, and Beg, were ready to pay the sum on the delivery of all my papers. On this information, I took all my papers out of my chest, and put them into the hands of the Archbishop of Mitelopolis, unperceived by any of my companions.

On the 15th, the associates met by my order. I informed them, that I was assured that a number among them were discontented with me; for which reason I thought proper to declare to them, that all those who were desirous of seeking their fortune elsewhere, were at liberty to quit me; and that as they had all received a retribution at my hands at the island of Formosa, I thought myself acquitted from them. I had scarcely made an end, before Mr. Stephanow loaded me with invectives, and charged me with an intention of depriving the company of their share of the advantages I was about to receive, from the knowledge I had acquired during the voyage; and that the moderation I had shewn at Formosa, in delivering my share  
of

of the presents of Prince Huapo, was merely a scheme to deprive them of greater advantages. He then excited the companions to throw off my authority, by assuring them that he would secure them a large fortune the instant they should determine to put my papers in his hands, and follow his party. The infamous plot of this wretch was nothing extraordinary; but when I understood that he was supported by Mr. Wyndbladth, my ancient Major, the companion of my exile, and my friend, I was incapable of setting bounds to my indignation, and could not avoid declaring, that their proceedings were highly disgraceful; and to confound them, I displayed their secret projects to the company, and justified my words by shewing Mr. Jackson's letter, which convinced them that Messrs. Stephanow and Wyndbladth, under pretence of serving the company, were desirous of securing the five thousand pounds to their own use. They were highly irritated, and threatened them; but Stephanow preserved a party of eleven, with whom he went to my lodgings; and while I remained in conversation with my friends, he seized my box, in which he supposed my papers were deposited. As soon as I heard of this outrage, I went to his chamber, followed by twenty associates; and as he refused to open the door, I broke it down. On my entrance he fired a pistol at me, which missed. In consequence of this attempt, I gave orders for seizing and keeping him in strict confinement; and as it was necessary likewise to secure Mr. Wyndbladth, I went to his chamber; but he had retired into the garden, armed with a pair of pistols and a sabre. I determined to shut him in, being convinced that he could not get over the walls on account of their great height. This whole affair passed without the least

least alarm without, as the doors of the house were shut.

On the 16th, Mr. Wyndbladth, fatigued by a continual rain, and perhaps urged by hunger, requested forgiveness, and surrendered himself to two companions I had appointed to watch him. Having thus made sure of these two turbulent men, I thought it proper they should be separated from the company; and they were therefore conducted to the castle by permission of the Governor: the officers of our company, being desirous of avenging themselves on the English emissaries, played them a trick, the whole effect of which fell upon a Jewish agent, who was severely flogged. Upon this wretch there were found minutes of proposals which he made to the companions, as follow:

1. That the English would pay to each associate one thousand piastres, in case they would serve the company, and put my papers in his hands.

2. That in case the associates refused to take the English party, the company would arrest them by force, in the name of the Empress of Russia, to deliver them up.

3. That the company would answer for obtaining the Empress's pardon for them, if they would determine to make a voyage to Japan, and the Aleuthes Islands.

Such proceedings cannot be attributed to men of sense. It was in my opinion a forgery, concerted between Mr. Stephanow and the Jew, to excite the associates against me.

On the 22d, I was attacked by a violent fever, and the Governor had the goodness to offer me an apartment in his house. I accepted his offer with the more pleasure, as the noise of my companions was insupportable. I therefore entrusted the command this day to Mr. Crustiew, and retired to the  
Governor's,

Governor's, where my illness continued till the 18th of November. During this period, four of my associates and three of their women died. The following is a list of those who died at Macao:

Miss Aphanasia du Nilow, ✓  
 Mess. Maxim Csurin, †  
 Afaph Baturin,  
 Philip Zabolicow, †  
 Nicholas Perevalow,  
 John Perevalow,  
 The Wife of Perevalow,  
 Andrew Maschinskoy,  
 George Panow,  
 Gregory Novozilow,  
 Stephen Kazakow,  
 Alexander Ziran,  
 George Nolinkin,  
 George Voronow,  
 Alexis Zacharka,  
 Boleslaus Sipiskoy,  
 Laurence Chodin,  
 Prince Zadskoy, ✓  
 Nicolas Zarskoy,  
 Casimir Levantiew,  
 James Lubimoy.

The great number of deaths in so short a time, gave me a very unfavourable opinion of the climate of China, at least of the Southern Provinces of the empire.

On the 25th of November, the Governor, seeing my health established, and being determined to lodge me in future among my companions, informed me that during my illness he had had great debates with the Chinese on my account, because the English Directors had informed them, that I was a pirate, and deserter from the Russians;  
 and

and that upon this information, the Governor or Viceroy of Canton, had required the Governor to deliver me up, or, at all events to make me depart immediately; and that he had obtained a delay till my recovery. For this reason he advised me to pretend that my illness still continued, until the time the French vessels should be ready to sail. From his embarrassment, I perceived he was apprehensive that he might find my affair troublesome to himself. I therefore begged him to remain neuter, and undertook to terminate the business with the Chinese myself.

On the 26th, I secretly dispatched Mr. Hifs and Mr. Cruftiew to Canton, with a memorial for the Viceroy, and a letter for Mr. Robien, in order that he might present it at the audience of the Chinese chief.

My deputies did not return till the 3d of December; when they brought me a chopp, or permission to wait upon the Viceroy at Canton. This imperial officer sent a superb vessel, with sixty-four oars for me, and caused a letter to be written to me, importing, that he was informed of the falsity of the insinuations against me, and hoped to convince me of the justice, which the Chinese knew how to render to heroes like me. This disposition was very flattering; but my satisfaction was of short duration, for on the 5th, which was fixed for my departure, the Mandarin, Hoppo of Macao, let me know, that if I did not intend to travel as far as Peking, it was of no use to go to Canton, as the Viceroy had nothing to communicate: this sudden change surprized every one, and especially the Bishop of Mitelopolis, who was strongly interested, in my favour. I was in doubt with myself this day, whether I should go to Peking. I was greatly affected; for I should have been exceedingly gratified with the view of the capital,

capital, and interior parts of the Chinese empire : and a favourable opportunity now presented itself ; but to have embraced it, would have required me to abandon my project, and defer my return to Europe. It was not till after much deliberation, that I at last determined to give up my intention of going to Canton.

On the 6th of December, my Japanese traveller appeared again, having suffered an illness of ten weeks. His recovery was very agreeable to me, as his person interested me strongly. This day, upon examining my chests, I found that the collections I had made of various kinds, in the course of my voyages, had disappeared ; and I at last heard, to my extreme grief, that Stephanow and Wyndbladth had sold the whole to the English Jew. I immediately sent after him ; but the rascal had retired, after his correction, to Canton. Mr. Sibaew assured me, that the Jew had bought the whole for one thousand five hundred piastres ; whereas the pearls alone which I had, were worth five times that sum.

On the 7th, the Bishop of Mitelopolis informed me, that he was informed by the Secretary of the Hoppo, (a Christian in secret) that the declaration of his master was false, and that the Viceroy was angry at not seeing me. He attributed this conduct to the intrigues of Mr. Jackson, and endeavoured to persuade me to write another memorial to the Viceroy ; but as I thought this step of no advantage to my interests, I refused to comply with his advice, being contented with being permitted to remain undisturbed at Macao.

On the 10th, I assembled all my companions, and proposed to them to embark on board the French ships, in order to return to Europe : they consented, and submitted entirely to my orders. This day, having received the apology and en-

treaties of Mr. Wyndbladth, I releas'd him from confinement; but as I could not place the same confidence in Mr. Stephanow, I paid him four thousand piaftres, with leave to go where he pleas'd. He immediately took part with the Hollanders, whose director, M. L'Heureux, expecting to derive some information from him concerning our voyage, received him, and sent him to Batavia.

On the 20th, I gave orders to make every preparation for our departure, having this day received the conventions, signed between me and the Captain, M. de St. Hilaire, in the service of the French East-India Company. These conventions were ratified by M. Robis,\* Director of the Company; in which I engag'd to pay the sum of one hundred and fifteen thousand livres Tournois, for the passage of myself, and all my people, to L'Orient.

On the 26th, having received information that it was necessary I should be provided with a chopp, or order of the Viceroy, to permit me to enter the river Tigu, I sent Mr. Hifs, as my commissioner for that purpose, to the Viceroy.

January the 1st, 1772. M. Hifs returned with the order, which cost me four hundred and fifty piaftres for three boats, which had been permitted to carry myself and people to the mouth of the Tigu.

On the 2d, I sold my vessel to a Portugueze merchant, for the sum of four thousand five hundred piaftres, ready money, and as much on credit: the Governor reserv'd to himself the whole of the stores.

\* Robien is the name of the Director mentioned page 76, where it is written in the M S. in the Count's hand-writing. T.

From the 5th to the 12th, I was employed in liquidating my accounts; and after having settled every thing, I found myself totally destitute.

On the 13th, I took my leave of the Governor, and chiefs of the town; and in the evening I embarked on board three sampans, with all my people, to go on board the French vessels, which were appointed to receive us at the time of their leaving the harbour of Canton.

On the 14th, we quitted Macao, where the Governor saluted me with twenty-one guns, from the principal fortrefs; and, after a tedious passage, we arrived at last at the mouth of the Tigu; where we were very civilly received by a Mandarin, though he at first refused to permit us to go on shore: the sight of a purse of piastras, however, abated his severity; which was so much altered by this circumstance, that he offered permission for us to take lodgings in the fort. His complaisance was very acceptable, for the ships did not arrive till the 22d; and in the mean time, I was at liberty to ride out on horseback, accompanied by some Tartars.

On the 22d, we at last saw the two ships; the first of which was the Dauphin, of sixty-four guns, commanded by the Chevalier de St. Hilaire, on board which I embarked, with half my people; and the second was the Laverdi, of fifty guns, which received the other half. After our embarkation we sailed for the isle of France.

On the 27th, we passed the English bank, on which we had soundings at thirty-six fathoms, sand and broken shells.

On the 4th of February we crossed the equator.

On the 6th, in the Straits, we joined a Spanish armed frigate, named the Pallas; and on the 16th of March, we arrived safely at the isle of France.

My arrival here was so much the more agreeable, as I was perfectly tired of the many questions the French proposed to me, respecting my discoveries during my former voyage: this voyage gave me an ample knowledge of the predominant character of a nation, to which I shall probably attach myself in future. As soon as we came to anchor, and the Governor, the Chevalier de Roche, was informed that I was on board, he sent a boat belonging to the government, to bring me on shore.

On my entrance into the town, I was received with military honours, and had the pleasure to be very amicably received by the Governor, who offered to accommodate me in his own house. I accepted this friendly offer with great satisfaction; more especially as I hoped, that his experience would be of service to me, in directing my conduct, with regard to the French Court and Ministry. After a day's repose, the Governor invited me to accompany him in his excursions upon the island; and these little journies made me acquainted with some of the interests of the French government, though I could never agree to call this establishment a colony. For the isle of France can never be made any thing more than a military post.

The arrival of Lieutenant Kreguelin, was a great relief to me. For this navigator having returned from a voyage to the Southern lands, gave employment to all the politicians and idle talkers of the island; who before his appearance, had no other object but myself. I became acquainted with this officer; but from what I had myself seen in the North, I could not believe that he had discovered such agreeable countries, as he asserted to exist on his Southern continent.

On the 1st of April, the Captain acquainted me, that he intended to depart on the 4th, and I got ready

ready my little accommodations, by the generous assistance of the Governor, who lent me a sum of money. On the 4th, having taken my leave, I embarked; and the Governor, with all the officers, paid me a visit on board. In the evening we set sail.

On the 12th, we anchored at the Island of Madagascar, where I went on shore at Fort Dauphin. Some particulars of information I had received from the Governor of the isle of France, induced me to wish for more ample information, respecting this fine and extensive island; but unfortunately for this purpose, I could not prolong my stay, but went on board again on the 14th.

On the 27th, we doubled the Cape of Good Hope.

On the 28th, we spoke with two French vessels, outward bound to India.

On the 24th of May, we saw two English vessels in the latitude of St. Helaina; and on the 18th of July, we happily arrived at the Isle de Croix. As soon as we had come to, I sent an officer to the Lieutenant du Roy, at Port Louis, who permitted me and all my people to lodge there.

On the 19th, I went on shore, and was very politely received by the Commandant; who agreed to send a courier to the Minister with my packets, which I addressed to the Duc D'Aiguillon.

On the 2d of August, I received an invitation from the Duc D'Aiguillon, which was brought by a messenger of state.

On the 8th of August, I arrived in Champagne, where the Minister then was, who received me with cordiality and distinction, and proposed to me to enter into the service of his master, with the offer of a regiment of infantry; which I accepted, on condition that his Majesty would be pleased

pleased to employ me in forming establishments beyond the Cape. In France, likewise, I had the happiness to find my uncle, the Count de Benyow, Commandant of the castle and town of Bar, Commander of the Royal Order of St. Lazare, and Chevalier de St. Louis. The assistance of this worthy relation, and the benevolence of his Majesty, put me in a condition to send an express into Hungary, to enquire after my spouse and child. She arrived at the end of the year; but she had the misfortune to see her son expire, at the instant of the arrival of my courier. An event which was the more affecting, as I was then in a situation to provide for him very advantageously in France.

In the course of the month of December, the Duke d'Aiguillon proposed to me from his Majesty, to form an establishment on the island of Madagascar, upon the same footing as I had proposed upon the island Formosa; and I at last complied with the desire of this Minister, to whom I shall be ever bound in gratitude, as well as personal esteem and attachment.\*

\* Here ends the second volume, according to the division of the Count, who has in this place annexed his abridged signature.

A MEMOIR



A

M E M O I R

CONCERNING THE

EXPEDITION to MADAGASCAR, for the Formation of a Royal Establishment on that Island ; the Execution and chief command of which, were intrusted by his MAJESTY\*, to the COUNT DE BENYOWSKY, proprietary Colonel of a Corps of Volunteers, in 1772.

P R E L I M I N A R I E S.

AS the success of every remote enterprize which is intended to form an establishment of Europeans, dependant always on precise orders and instructions, as well as preparations and well-founded operations, made in consequence of a knowledge of the country, and proportioned to the advantages which are proposed to be obtained, I think it necessary to give an account of the circumstances which preceded my arrival on this island. Circumstances which prove, that notwithstanding

\* The King of France.

ing

ing the very scanty means which have been afforded me, I have succeeded in forming treaties of friendship and alliance with the greater part of the inhabitants of this extensive island; and, consequently, that if I had not been, as I may say, totally abandoned by the Minister, which was the source of the miseries, diseases, and mortality, to which myself and my people were exposed; the island of Madagascar, at this day in alliance with France, would have formed a power, capable of supporting her colonies of the isles of France and Bourbon, and defending her establishments in India, as well as securing new branches of commerce to that kingdom, which would have carried immense sums into the royal treasury.

In order to exhibit in the most perspicuous manner, the different obstacles which I have experienced since my arrival in this island, and to develop those events which by sudden revolutions have procured me favourable advantages in forming this establishment, I shall give an account of the original dispositions of the Minister, upon which it was ordered that I should regulate my operations.

Here follows the account:

On the 15th of September, 1772, Mr. De Boynes, Secretary of State for the Marine department, communicated to me the intentions of his Majesty, to make a considerable enterprize on the island of Madagascar, and, that his Majesty had determined to entrust this expedition to my care. In consequence of which, he informed me of these determinations, that I might take the most speedy and proper measures to carry this important and honourable enterprize into execution.

After having thanked this Minister for the confidence he honoured me with, I observed, that having no knowledge of Madagascar, and being  
absolutely

absolutely ignorant of the nature of the enterprize which his Majesty was desirous of entrusting me with, I could not myself regulate the measures necessary for such an expedition; the success of which would depend on orders and means, in conformity to which I should regulate my operations with the greatest exactness.

The Minister, after having assured me that nothing which might be necessary to secure the success of my mission should be wanting, added, that the intention of his Majesty was to form an establishment at Madagascar, in favour of which, at some future time, a much more extensive plan might be carried into execution, by gaining the confidence of the King, Princes, and chiefs of the country, and engaging them to put their island under the protection of his Majesty. Upon this I represented, that in order to execute an enterprize of this nature, and of such great importance, in so remote a country, the intemperate climate of which, together with the jealousy of the inhabitants, had so often deranged the projects, and rendered former attempts abortive, the operations would require well-combined dimensions, considerable forces, and continued supplies, to prevent any thing from being left to chance. The Minister approved my representations, and promised to provide for every thing; reserving to himself the regulation of the different details, which my mission might require, and which he proposed to concert with me at the end of the month.

Some days after the Minister, having sent for me to his hotel, informed me, that the intentions of his Majesty were to entrust me with the command of a military corps of twelve hundred men; and that during the time I should be employed in raising them, he would take care to give the most precise orders, that nothing might be wanting to expedite

expedite the considerable enterprize to which I was invited. I represented to the Minister, that the number of one thousand two hundred men appeared to me to be too considerable for an enterprize, where nothing more was intended than to gain the confidence of the natives of the country; and I requested, that the troop destined to accompany me to Madagascar, might not amount to more than three hundred men. To this proposal the Minister agreed.

On the 20th of January, 1773, the recruits being raised, I informed the Minister, and requested his orders, and the communication of his instructions, respecting the enterprize in which his Majesty designed to employ me. He replied, that he had not yet been able to work upon it; and that he had put it into the hands of the first Commis. I waited upon the latter, whom I found busied in drawing up the plan; but his work not being finished, I could not receive any precise information from him.

At the beginning of February, the Minister having sent for me again, declared that the plan drawn out by his Commis, was not to his mind; and that he left me at liberty to draw it out myself. He ordered me likewise to add the necessary demands for the execution of my mission, and said, that the intentions of his Majesty were to form at Madagascar a simple establishment, by favour of which the subsistence of the islands of France and Bourbon might be secured, or new branches of trade might be opened, and men supported, who might be serviceable in India in the next war which might happen. He concluded, by exhorting me to omit nothing in this plan of all the demands necessary for its execution. From these particulars of information, which I learned from the mouth of the Minister, concerning my  
commission,

commission, I continued to confer with Mr. Audat, the first Commis, who had no knowledge of Madagascar, but from the contradictory relations of merchants, which were more suited to confuse the subject, than to give the slightest information relative to my expedition. He communicated to me several accounts of Madagascar, and a map of the island; from which, as well as from the particular account of Mr. Johannis, Captain of a vessel, who had made several voyages to Madagascar, I founded the plan which follows:

A PLAN WHICH WAS PRESENTED TO THE MINISTER FOR SECURING THE PERFORMANCE OF MY OPERATIONS AT MADAGASCAR.

### A R T I C L E I.

The minister will please to give orders for my passage, with my corps of volunteers for the isle of France, with one year's provision of meat, drink, and pay.

### A R T I C L E II.

He will please to give orders to the chiefs of the Isle of France to furnish me with two vessels of the burden of one hundred and twenty, or one hundred and fifty tons each; which will serve to transport the troops and necessary provisions for the establishment at Madagascar. One of these vessels should remain subject to my orders, to be employed in the coasting service of the island, and the other to return to France, in order to inform the minister of the position and success of the enterprise,

terprize, with other circumstances necessary to be communicated.

### A R T I C L E III.

The minister will please to give orders to the chiefs of the isle of France, to supply me with merchandize to the value of two hundred thousand livres, with a supply of artillery and warlike stores, together with utensils for the hospitals, and workmen, with their instruments and tools for the construction of the necessary habitations of his majesty's people.

### A R T I C L E IV.

To avoid the ravages which the unwholesomeness of the climate of Madagascar might occasion, during the time of erecting proper buildings on the spot, the minister will please to order the chiefs of the isle of France to supply me with four buildings framed in wood; one to serve as a general storehouse; the second as an hospital; the third as a barrack; and the fourth for my own habitation.

### A R T I C L E V.

The minister will please to join to my mission, persons attached to the administration, to regulate and conduct the affairs of finances and accounts; and who, at the same time, may take charge of the commercial business, while my attention is directed to the forming of the establishment.

A R T I C L E

## A R T I C L E VI.

The minister will please to order the chiefs of the isle of France to assist me, in case of need, with men, provisions, ammunition, articles of trade, and money for the pay of my troops.

## A R T I C L E VII.

The minister will please to send out to me the first year, one hundred and twenty recruits, to keep up the establishment, until I can receive his final instructions.

After having presented to the minister this plan, reduced into seven articles, I protested to him that I should succeed in gaining the confidence of the natives of the country, and in forming the intended establishment, if my demands were exactly complied with; but that, as operations of this nature indispensably required a particular and studied knowledge of the place, I should have the honour to address to him a more extended and better combined plan, with circumstantial details and topographic charts of the country, and information respecting the manners, laws, and governments of the islands; and, lastly, a regular statement of the demands proper to be complied with, to secure the execution of so vast a project.

The minister, after having read my propositions, approved them so far as to assure me, that he would give an account of them to his Majesty, and that I might depend on the whole being executed to my utmost satisfaction. The particular conferences which I had, during the course of the month of February, with Mr. De Boynes, and the Duke  
D'Aiguillon

D'Aiguillon confirmed me more and more in the persuasion, that nothing would be wanting for my expedition.

On the 19th of March, being sent for by the minister, I received a letter, which contained the intentions of his majesty, concerning the formation of the establishment of Madagascar, with the copy of another, addressed to the chiefs of the isle of France; and he recommended to me at the same time, to repair without delay, with all my men, to port L'Orient, where I should receive his orders for my passage to the isle of France.

I then saw that my mission was in some respect abandoned to the discretion of the chiefs of that island; and that the slightest want of disposition, or misunderstanding on their part, would be capable not only of injuring my operations, but even of entirely frustrating them. I made my representations to the minister, at the same time requesting him to change the contents of the letter addressed to them; and to cause me to be supplied from France with the most indispensable supplies. His answer was, that there was no more time to make any change in these dispositions; that he was assured of the good disposition and zeal of the chiefs of the isle of France, who certainly would not suffer me to be in want of any assistance; and, lastly, that being upon the spot, I might do every thing which I judged of advantage to the service. He added, that he would besides provide by new orders for the particular supplies, which the safety of the establishment required.

Notwithstanding this decisive answer, I ventured to make new representations on the inconvenience which might result from such an arrangement; but the minister persisted in his first answer; and added, that the intentions of his majesty being, that I should repair as speedily as possible to the isle of  
France,

France, I could not hasten my departure too much. I therefore left him, with my mind filled with the evils and sufferings to which myself and my troops would be exposed. It was with a view to prevent these that I addressed myself to the Duke D'Aiguillon; to whom I communicated the orders and dispositions of the minister, respecting my mission, and the just fears which they produced of my want of success. But the Duke comforted me with the promise that he would confer with Mr. De Boynes, that the face of affairs would certainly change, and that I might make myself easy.

The following day Mr. Audat, first Commis of the marine, came to me, and informed me, that the minister being busied with important and pressing affairs, could not confer at that moment with me, concerning my mission, but that he had sent him to assure me, that every thing should be done to my utmost satisfaction; that he had determined to change the letter addressed to the chiefs of the isle of France, and even to augment the demands I had made; that I might depart immediately for that island, as I should soon be joined by succours dispatched immediately from France; and that, in the mean time, the chiefs of the isle of France would supply me conformably to the orders transmitted to them with the supplies I might want before the arrival of those which I should receive immediately at Madagascar, and which would in future place me in a situation to do without supplies from that island; and, lastly, that with regard to the letter addressed to the chiefs of the island, the most essential articles had been changed, in order to let them know that I was left master of my operations, and that they were no otherwise concerned in my mission than in supplying me with the indispensable assistance I might want.

This

This overture of the first Commis, satisfied me so much the more, as I conceived the pleasing hope of acquitting myself with honour, in the important commission, which it had pleased his majesty to entrust me with.

On the 22d of March, I took my audience of leave; and had the satisfaction to hear a confirmation of the news from the mouth of the minister; who put the letters and instructions which are annexed to the present volume, into my hands, and added the following words, "I shall provide for all your demands, and you will have reason to be contented with me." Being thus dispatched by the minister, I departed for L'Orient; where I embarked on board the vessel La Marquise de Marbeuf.

On the 22d of September, I landed on the isle of France, where I found a detachment of my corps, who had arrived before me; the rest had remained at L'Orient to wait for ships. On my arrival in this colony, Mr. de Ternay, the Governor, was absent, and did not return till the month of October; and as Mr. Maillart had refused to confer alone with me on the affairs of my mission, before the return of the Governor, I waited till that time; and then demanded four days to regulate affairs with them, concerning my departure to Madagascar. In answer to this, these gentlemen replied, that their objects being separate, they would not confer with me, but each individually. I therefore waited on Mr. De Ternay, on the 22d of the month; of whom, after having communicated my orders, I demanded the furniture and assistance necessary to my operations. But he replied, that no particular order had been addressed to him relative to my mission; that the general letter of the minister, regarded Mr. Maillart more than himself, since  
the

the furniture and assistance I stood in need of, depended on the treasury funds, which he did not concern himself with; that he would do his duty, in whatever related to the formation of my corps, and would put into my hands his majesty's packet the Postillion, which had been forwarded by the Court, for the service of my mission; and, lastly, that all the rest related to the intendant.

After this interview, I waited on Mr. Maillart, to whom I likewise communicated the orders of the minister; and gave him a statement of my demands of furniture and assistance, necessary to the execution of my mission, of which I gave a detail of the circumstances; at the same time urging such reasons, as appeared to me the most persuasive, to induce him to concur in every thing which might depend on him, and might promote the good of the service, on this occasion. But what was my surprize to hear him say, that he was very much astonished, that the Court had undertaken such an expedition, so prejudicial to the isle of France; all whose merchants would be ruined, if the establishment should succeed at Madagascar; where, by their concurrence, they carried on an advantageous commerce, which could not be legally prohibited by a simple letter of the minister; but that, nevertheless, he would see what could be done, until he received the most positive orders of the Court: but that he could not avoid informing the Court, that the project was impracticable; because the Madagascar people having for one hundred and fifty years past, repelled all the attempts of France, they would not submit at this moment, when they were united under a solid government formed by themselves.

Such an answer, from the second in command of the colony, confirmed still more the fears I had conceived at Versailles, that I was to be abandoned to the mercy of a jealous party; who, as several reports evinced, did not scruple to declare publicly, against the establishment at Madagascar, and who had already begun to strike the first strokes; which, as will hereafter be seen, have placed the establishment in the most unhappy situation.

On the 28th of October, Mr. De Maisonville, whom the minister had nominated to the place of sub-commiffary and store-keeper under me, having refused to go to Madagascar, Mr. Maillart nominated in his place, the Sieur Vahis, a ship's clerk, of known bad character; whose public impositions rendered him unworthy of a post, which required an equal share of probity and capacity. I made my representations on this subject to Mr. Maillart, assuring him, that I never would have any connection with a disgraced man; and that he must immediately make choice of a person, more worthy of such a situation. He contented himself with answering, that the Sieur Vahis was good enough for Madagascar; where he had no wish to expose people of any value, as it was sending them to certain destruction. The indignation which such a reply deserved, led me to take the most prudent step. I turned my back upon him.

On the 24th of the same month, I conferred again, and more amply, with Mr. de Ternay, respecting my mission; and gave him an affecting sketch of the unhappy position in which my corps was about to be placed, and the sufferings to which we should be exposed, if he persisted in refusing the assistance I demanded. But I could do nothing with this Governor, who publickly asserted, that the establishment at Madagascar could not succeed, because the minister had been so indiscreet, as not

to

to consult the chiefs of the isle of France, on the means necessary to be employed.

Mr. Maillart, on the other hand, continually repeated, that the minister ought to have confided this expedition solely to the chiefs of the isle of France; because, being personally interested, they would have provided for all the assistance which might have been required; instead of which, the orders of the minister concerning the supplies to be made to the establishment, being ambiguous, they durst not proceed upon them.

I perceived, therefore, that no other steps remained for me to take, than that of hastening my departure for Madagascar, at the risque of being exposed to the last misery, and to be abandoned in the most cruel manner, until the arrival of the supplies directly from France, which I expected from the minister. This determination, though violent, was most suitable to my engagements, and my sense of honour. I therefore overlooked all the inconveniencies, and gave orders for the departure of the packet, the Postillion, with a detachment of thirty men; and instructions for making enquiries respecting the place, manners, and power of the inhabitants; in order that I might be better enabled to expedite my operations, in obedience to the orders his majesty had honoured me with.

On the 7th of December, the Sieur Saunier, Lieutenant of a frigate, and Commander of the Postillion, set sail, and departed the same day with my detachment, on his way to Madagascar. From the road he wrote me a letter, in which he informed me, that Mr. Maillart, notwithstanding the requisition I had made for the good of the service, and the repeated promises he had made to comply with them, had given no orders, but for objects of small consequence; and those not sufficient for the

ordinary presents to the chiefs. He added, that he had refused him a supply of brandy, for the subsistence of the detachment; and that he should be obliged to deliver that article out of his own stores.

Justly astonished at what I heard, I waited upon Mr. Maillart, for an explanation of these circumstances; but his answer was, that the Court had left him master of his own operations, in whatever related to Madagascar, and that it would be of no use for me to apply to him in future, upon that subject.

In several conversations I had with Mr. De Ternay, for the seven following days, I begged him to persuade Mr. Maillart to comply with his duty, in respect to my mission; and, jointly, to let the merchants who frequented the coast of Madagascar know, that they were to suspend their commerce, till new orders were received from the minister; in order that I might take cognizance of abuses, and put the trade upon a footing more suitable to the advantage of the public, and of the settlement in particular. He acquiesced in my demand; but upon hearing that he had merely written, but not published his order, I redoubled my complaints; and had the mortification to receive for answer from Mr. Maillart, that he thought it very extraordinary, I should insist on an object, which was foreign to my department, as it related to a commerce, which being authorized, could not be prohibited, and still less abolished, by a simple letter of the minister.

On the 22d, the armament of my corps not being yet arrived from France, and having been obliged to exercise them with arms which had been borrowed, I requested arms of Mr. De Ternay, Lieutenant of the arsenal of the isle of France; and after several contests, I obtained them, and  
armed

armed my troops in a proper manner, in consequence of the care I took to get the greatest part of the arms repaired.

On the 25th, being informed that a private ship was on the point of setting sail for Madagascar, and being desirous of seizing this opportunity, of forwarding my orders to Mr. Saunier and D'Esteryby, I sent for the Sieur Vahis, who still performed the functions of store-keeper, and enquired of him concerning the state of the fitting out of my expedition. To this he answered, that he was accountable only to Mr. Maillart, and not at all to me; and that he was not bound to attend to the smallest advice I might give him. This unexpected answer from a man, who by the nature of the service was subjected to my orders, induced me to complain to Mr. Maillart; who coolly answered, that the Sieur Vahis acted according to his instructions, and that I must expect nothing more.

On the 28th, I again waited on Mr. De Ternay, to engage him to renew his conference with Mr. Maillart, upon the supplies required for my expedition. But he answered, that the minister having addressed his orders directly to Mr. Maillart, it was he alone who was charged with their execution. I therefore waited upon this Intendant, accompanied with my major, and a captain of the corps; and made the most pressing representations to him, by observing, that my demands were founded on his majesty's orders, signified by the minister, and that he could not, without failing in his duty, refuse me such things as my operations indispensably required. But his answer was such as I had no reason to expect from a man in place. He indulged himself in the most indecent observations on my mission; and had the confidence to say, that if Mr. De Ternay would follow his advice,

vice,

vice, he would put a stop to my expedition, because the Court had not reflected on this project, formed by a mere adventurer; and that even if the minister should give him the most positive orders, he would rather throw up his employment, than have any concern in a scheme so badly projected. This indecent answer obliged me to quit him without answering a word; and I availed myself of the departure of a ship for France, to inform the minister of all that had passed between the chiefs of the isle of France and myself.

At the beginning of the month of December, the rest of my people having arrived at the isle of France in the Laverdi, and being desirous of hastening my departure for Madagascar, I demanded of the chiefs of the isle of France vessels for my transport; at the same time that I delivered to them a list of the most indispensable things, such as tools, medicines, and particularly twelve casks of vinegar, and three filtering stones. I insisted more strongly on these last articles, because I was fully informed of the bad qualities of the waters of Madagascar, which were either muddy, or charged with metallic matter; and that filtering stones and vinegar were the only means of rendering them less noxious, as had been proved with great success, in different European garrisons.

On the 11th of December, Mr. Maillart invited me to a conference, either at his house, or at that of Mr. De Ternay. I gave the preference to the former, where Mr. Maillart, in the presence of Mr. De Ternay, and Mr. De Bellecombe, ancient commandant at Bourbon, made excuses for his former behaviour, requested my friendship, and assured me, that the veil that had hitherto covered his eyes with regard to my mission, was now removed; and that he now knew, that the minister had particular reasons for employing me in the establishment

ment at Madagascar ; the labour of which he was ready to share with me, as far as it depended on the supplies to be furnished by him. He begged I would forget all that had passed, and grant him my friendship. My answer had no need to be studied. The Intendant appeared to be sensible of the impropriety of his conduct, and protested, that he was ready to exert himself, in promoting the success of my enterprize. I therefore assured him, that my esteem and friendship would always go together ; and that from that moment, he was in possession of both. This protestation, on my part, was the more sincere, as I could form no idea, that a man in possession of a confidential employment, could be guilty of such a degree of imposition and hypocrisy ; but the sequel will shew, that the Intendant had no such scruples.

On the 17th, Mr. De Ternay supplied me with artillery and military stores, which I was in want of for my departure ; and I seriously set about exercising part of my men with the artillery, which they managed to my great satisfaction. Mr. Maillart, on his part, took the treasury chest out of the hands of the Sieur Vahis, and entrusted it to the Sieur Senaut, whom I was not acquainted with. These chiefs, some days afterwards, let me know, that they designed the vessel Le des Forges for my transport, which was every day expected from Bourbon ; but Mr. Maillart observed, that he could send only a very small part of the articles of trade by that vessel ; that the store-houses were absolutely without vinegar, and that he did not know what had become of the filtering stones : but that he would not fail to forward these by the first ship, even if he were obliged to buy them of the merchants. On the last day of the same month, I begged Mr. De Ternay to make a review of my corps, with that commissary. I caused my men

to be supplied with clothes, as those which had been sent me had proved exceedingly defective.

January the 1st, 1774. Having received a packet from Madagascar, by which I learned, that the supplies delivered by the Postillion were so small, that my detachment had scarcely three months eatables, and that my presence was highly necessary, because some of the chiefs had already begun to commit hostilities; I addressed myself to Mess. de Ternay and Maillart, entreating them to furnish me with a vessel as early as possible, to carry me to my place of destination. But as those gentlemen replied, that they could not procure me one in the course of the month, all those which were at their disposal being employed in the service of the colony, I determined to freight a vessel myself, to carry succours and a reinforcement of men to my detachment. But I was prevented from doing this, by the promise of Mr. de Ternay, who assured me, that I should have the vessel I demanded before the expiration of January. I therefore prepared my corps for their departure; but upon the report, that sixty-three men were in the hospital, I determined to leave them under the orders of Mr. Maring, my lieutenant colonel, under the conduct of captain de Sanglier, until their perfect recovery, when they were to be transported to Madagascar without delay. I learned, at the same time, that part of my troops were seduced by the other regiments; that some of my volunteers had already deserted, and that the disadvantageous observations on our expedition had been urged with such malice and success, that part of my officers had pretended sickness, with a view to delay their departure for Madagascar. I understood, likewise, that the chiefs of the isle of France had sent emissaries to Madagascar to the king Hyavi, and other chiefs, to warn them that I was come to deprive them

them of their liberty, and that I had no other intention than to impose the yoke of slavery upon the whole island.

In this unhappy situation, being apprehensive that his majesty's service might greatly suffer from so horrible a prejudice, I harangued my troops, and particularly my officers, who, conquered by the force of reasoning and their own sentiments of honour, returned to their duty, and chearfully disposed themselves to follow me. I then published my departure for Madagascar, and caused it to be proclaimed, that all volunteers, particularly workmen, who might be disposed to accompany me, should come and propose their conditions. This produced a considerable number of applications; but not knowing whether they were free, and being desirous of avoiding the slightest offence, I addressed myself to Mess. de Ternay and Maillart. The first replied, that he could not give permission to any one to leave the island; and Mr. Maillart said, and publicly repeated the assertion, that he would openly oppose any person's departure who might chuse to follow me to Madagascar, because it would be sending them to the butchery. For he said, he had received information, that several bodies of armed islanders waited for me, in readiness to attack my forces. This Intendant carried affairs to such an height, as to endeavour to seduce one of my chief officers, and to prevail on him to send him a full account of my operations at all opportunities. Thus it was that this chief exerted himself in carrying the minister's orders into effect.

On the 22d, I profited by the departure of his majesty's flute La Triquaire to send my packets to the court. The following days I was busied in embarking the effects of my troop; and Mr. Maillart having assured me, that he would take  
care

care to deliver all the articles he had orders to furnish for Madagascar, I became easy. My visits being made and returned, I gave an entertainment on the 2d of February on the occasion of the birth of my son, at the Great River; after which I commanded my troops to repair to the harbour with colours flying. They immediately went on board, and I had the long-expected pleasure of setting sail for Madagascar at six in the evening.

On the 5th, the North winds obliged us to anchor at Bourbon, whence we departed on the 7th, and at last we arrived at the bay of Antongil, where we anchored on the 14th of the same month.

As the facts which I have related have no other connection with what follows, than by the various unhappy consequences they have produced, which originated in the want of disposition, or as I may say, original jealousies of the chiefs of the isle of France, they may be considered only as preliminary to the history of the establishment I have formed at Madagascar.

A FULL

MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS OF  
MONTCAULOU  
A FULL  
ACCOUNT OF PARTICULARS  
RELATING TO THE  
ROYAL ESTABLISHMENT

AT  
MADAGASCAR,

Entrusted to M. the COUNT DE BENYOWSKY: from his Arrival on the Island on the 14th of February, 1774.

AS soon as the Des Forges had come to anchor, I sent the small boat on shore, to bring the earliest news of the situation of my detachment, and the disposition of the islanders. The shore was lined with chiefs, who expressed the greatest satisfaction at seeing me; a circumstance which gave me no small pleasure. But these agreeable ideas were much diminished, upon entering the palifade which enclosed my men, and which, for want of effects to pay the blacks, they had been obliged to construct themselves. This hard work, at their first landing in an extremely hot country, had exhausted and reduced them to the most deplorable state. The commanding officer and surgeon  
were

were both ill, without assistance or medicines, and under the necessity of keeping a continual guard day and night against the natives, who had made an irruption upon my feeble detachment with a number of armed men: and notwithstanding their weakness, they had defended themselves with such firmness, that they took seven prisoners from a chief named Raoul; but whom, by a stroke of policy, they had thought proper to send back without any ransom. All these circumstances, which I had learned by the accounts of Mr. Saunier and the Sieur de la Boulaye, volunteers in my corps, had almost entirely exhausted the detachment.

My first care was to use every exertion to give them all the assistance their unhappy situation required. They had no storehouse, barracks, nor hospital, nor even a lodging to receive me under cover from the open air. These different buildings could not be constructed in a short time, except by the islanders themselves. I therefore thought it proper to neglect no means of inducing them to enter into the interests of the establishment; and to gain their confidence, I caused the greatest number of them to meet together, to whom I distributed presents, and had the satisfaction to purchase several of the huts of the country, which served to lodge my officers and troops, until the indispensable buildings could be got forward. A hut was erected in haste, to serve for my lodging, and the work went on with such spirit, that I was able to disembark the troops I had brought with me the following day. They came on shore with all the pomp and in the best order possible, with a view to inspire the islanders with respect.

While these things were performing to the best of my wishes, I turned my thoughts to the discharge of the cargo. For this purpose, I demanded of Mr. de Saint Felix, commander of the Des Forges,

Forges, the invoice of the effects he had in his charge. But great was my astonishment to see that, notwithstanding the protestations and brilliant promises of Mr. Maillart, the vessel contained little or no liquor, nor articles of trade, and that the greatest part of the ship's cargo consisted of coals, an article then of the smallest importance. In this critical situation I was forced to purchase the wine, brandy, merchandize, and medicines the captain offered to sell me; and upon his refusing to take a letter of exchange upon the king, as I could by no means dispense with the goods, I gave him a bill on my own account for the sum of fourteen thousand five hundred livres.

The day after, February the 17th, having demanded workmen to assist in the works, Mr. de Saint Felix refused them, alledging an order of the chiefs of the isle of France; but as he did not shew me this order after I had summoned him so to do, I made use of the authority his majesty had been pleased to entrust me with.

February the 19th, I sent advice to all the chiefs of the province of Antimaroa to repair on the 1st of March to Louisbourg, that I might inform them of the intentions of his majesty respecting the establishment I was to form at Madagascar, and to engage them as much as possible in our interest. At the same time I gave orders to mount the artillery, and to secure ourselves from surprize. Upwards of two hundred natives were voluntarily employed in carrying earth to raise the ground above the level of the river, and to begin to fill the neighbouring swamp.

On the 23d, his majesty's frigate L'Oiseau, commanded by a Lieutenant, and his majesty's vessel Le Rolland, commanded by Mr. Kerguelin, having anchored in the road, with two hundred of their people sick, I gave them every assistance in my power;

power; and more particularly an abundant supply of refreshments, by means of which their health was speedily restored.

On the 25th of the same month, his majesty's packet *Le Dauphin*, commanded by Mr. Feron, an attendant on the expedition of Mr. Kerguelin, anchored likewise in the road.

March the 1st, 1774. Having received information, that all the chiefs of the province of Antimaroa were on their way to Louisbourg, where I had appointed to hold a conference, I gave new orders, to guard against any surprize; and the following day I received them without our enclosure, accompanied with some of my officers, and a detachment of thirty men. These chiefs were twenty-eight in number, and were escorted by about two thousand armed blacks, who formed a circle, at the entrance of which I seated myself; and informed them by my interpreter, that the intentions of the king of France being to favour and take under his protection the inhabitants of Madagascar, in which he was actuated by a knowledge of their attachment to the French nation, he had resolved to form an establishment, to defend them against their enemies; and to keep warehouses, at which they would at all times find, at cheap rates, such merchandizes as they might want; namely, cloth, liquors, powder, balls, gun flints, &c. which should be furnished to them in exchange for the productions of their country, and in particular rice, which they could not cultivate too largely; and that in return for the advantages his majesty was disposed to heap on them, I required only the three following conditions:

The first was, that they should enter into a treaty of friendship and alliance with me, and grant me land to fix my establishments; and that they should permit the islanders to sell lands to such of the French

French nation as should be disposed to settle among them.

The second was, that they should allow me to establish in the inland part of the country, near the source of the river Tingballe, hospitals and store-houses upon a proper spot of ground.

And lastly, in the third place, that they should engage to defend the property of the establishment.

My interpreter had scarcely ended, before they all set up shouts of joy; and said, they could not doubt the good intentions of the king, as he had sent ships and troops to them, in preference to the other provinces, to support them against their enemies; that they acknowledged him from thenceforth as their friend, and should consent to cede to me the land upon which I had begun to form my establishment, provided I entered into an oath not to construct fortresses. With respect to the land I required up the country, they said they would consider of it; but that they required an oath, by which I should acknowledge that I had no right over them, and would confine myself to the simple title of their friend, in which quality I should assist them against their enemies.

Having acceded to the propositions, we celebrated the oath to ratify our union. This ceremony, which they call Cabarre, was seconded by an entertainment, in which they drank a cask of brandy I distributed among them. My friends then returned to their own villages, where they celebrated new festivals, in testimony of their joy at having gained the friendship of the king of France.

On the 3d, I dispatched the Postillion, commanded by the Sieur Saunier, and attached to my expedition, with orders to repair to Foul Point, and dislodge the individuals who were endeavouring to prejudice the natives against my establishment; and  
to

to assure Hyavi, the king and grand chief of the province, of my friendship, as well as to make presents to him, and to engage him to demand my assistance against the Fariavas, with whom he was at war. This appeared to me the most certain method of obtaining permission to establish a post at Foul Point.

On the 9th, his majesty's packet *Le Dauphin*, failed for the isle of France, after receiving from me a supply of brandy and rice, of which she was in the greatest want.

On the information of my people, that the blacks in spite of their oaths, insulted the sentinels in the night, and the *Sieur Senan*, store-keeper, having at the same time made complaint, that the magazines had been robbed, I gave notice to the chiefs, that if any natives should approach the posts in the night, without answering the sentinel, as had been agreed, I should be forced to fire upon them. They only replied to my interpreters, that if I killed one black, they would in return kill ten whites. The same evening a black armed with his *sagaye*, having with others come near a sentinel, placed before a magazine, and instead of answering having thrown a *sagaye* at him, the sentinels fired upon them, slew one, and wounded two others. This action, though just, appeared to the natives a just cause of complaint and retaliation; which I took care to prevent, by removing them to the distance of our out-posts. To succeed in this without exposing my people I proposed to four chiefs, to sell me their villages, which surrounded *Louisbourg*. They consented, and evacuated them as soon as they were paid; and I gave immediate orders for demolishing them. In this manner I became master of the whole point of land, and my people were less exposed to opportunities of debauchery.

On

On the 11th instant, I sent on board his majesty's ships *Le Rolland* and *L'Oiseau* thirty oxen. The blacks, though they had retired, and were satisfied by the payment for their villages, did not abandon their design of ruining the establishment. I was informed by a free negress, that they had agreed to poison us all, beginning with myself, by means of the provisions they might sell us. In consequence of this, I forbade the purchasing any thing from the natives, until they had themselves first eaten of it. This proof cost one of them his life; for by tasting some fruit he offered to sale, he suddenly fell down lifeless. His accomplices being informed of this tragical event, which disclosed their plot, fled up the river, where they laboured to stop the passage by felling trees across it. They likewise fired upon a detachment I sent to reconnoitre them.

The following day, a chief named *Siloulout*, under pretence of coming to render homage, requested an interview near a wood. This extraordinary demand, together with his refusal to come to the government, leading me to suspect some treachery, I sent out to watch his movements, and soon learned, that in consequence of an oath he had entered into with the *Saphirobay*, to assassinate me, he waited for my coming with about three hundred armed blacks; and that a much more considerable number were concealed in the wood. To frustrate this base attempt, I sent out two field pieces, preceded by fifty volunteers, commanded by two officers, who marched up to the enemy with such spirit, that this great multitude of blacks were struck with fear. Some retreated into the marshes, and the rest went on board their boats, whence they made the most violent discharge of their pieces, but without effect. This obliged me to point my field pieces at them. The first

VOL. II, I ball

ball overfet one of their largeft boats, and killed feveral men. Two days after this event, I was informed by a female negro spy, that the chiefs Saphirobay and Siloulout, had formed with Raoul the project of a league with the neighbouring provinces, to destroy the eftablifhment effectually. In order to avoid the effects of fo dangerous a confpiracy, I gave orders to my major to march at eleven at night, with a detachment of fixty volunteers, and proceed in the boats of Le Rolland and L'Oifeau, direct to the enemies camp, which was about three leagues diftant. The troops landed at three in the morning, and immediately attacked them, and drove them into the wood; after which they reduced their village to afhes, and destroyed their works. This ftroke reftored the tranquillity of the eftablifhment; and I went myfelf with my major and engineer, to examine an elevated ifland named D'Aiguillon, which is only one league diftant from Louifbourg. Here I gave orders for conftituting an oven, an hospital, and a redoubt for defending a botanical garden at the foot of the mountain of Difcovery.

On the 21ft, his majefty's two veffels, Le Rolland and Le Des Forges, fet fail; the firft for France, and the latter for the ifle of France. Mr. Kerguelin left behind him twelve men attacked with the fcurvy.

On the 24th, fix neighbouring provinces, who were overjoyed at the catastrophe of the chiefs Raoul, Siloulout, and their other mortal enemies, deputed envoys to me, to propofe an oath of friendship, and to make presents; in return for which, as well as to attach them to our interefts, I caufed brandy to be diftributed among them in proportion to their number, which was confiderable.

On

On the 26th, Saphirobay sent presents, and requested peace. I informed them, that after the attempts they had made against the establishment, it was pardon and not peace which they ought to require; and that I would not pardon them, so long as they acknowledged as their chief Raoul, whose infamous behaviour had been manifested in attempts against the settlement; and lastly, that they should begin by clearing the river, and leaving us the free liberty of navigating it. They retired with promises to comply with my demands; but the following day we had evident proof to the contrary, for the river was covered with trees loaded with fruit. I gave orders to examine what it was, and immediately found, that the Saphirobay had covered the river with tanguin, which is the strongest poison they are acquainted with, and with which they intended to poison the river, which was the only water we used. I was therefore obliged for the preservation of my troops, to cause the river to be cleared, and to send a party of natives, engaged and commanded by a party of volunteers, to encamp and cut down and burn all the trees of this kind, which were in the neighbourhood of the river. This precaution, though expensive, was of the last necessity, to deliver us from certain destruction.

On the 30th, I repaired to Manambia, where I discovered an ore of copper on a mountain. I gave advice of this discovery to the minister, having first prohibited any one from touching it.

April the 1st, 1774. Several chiefs of Angontzi came to offer their friendship, with a promise of conforming to all the articles which had been proposed in the former Cabars; and at the same time requesting as a favour, that a trade might be established in their country. This induced me to

send a Commis with four volunteers, and a quantity of merchandize.

In the night, between the 1st and 2d, having visited the posts myself, I perceived that seven volunteers, with their arms and baggage, were missing. These circumstances led me to suspect that they had deserted, and the accounts I received the following day convinced me of the truth of my suspicions. In this juncture I could make no use of my troops, on account of their imperfect knowledge of the place. I therefore sent a number of blacks after the deserters, commanded by the officers of my own corps. This precaution was the more necessary, as I had already received information, that more than fifty other volunteers, with two officers among their number, had agreed to follow the seven deserters. To prevent this second evil, I put the whole troop under arms, and after having reviewed them, and caused them to ground their arms, I commanded them to the right about, and marched them off without their arms, which were all carried into my apartment. I immediately caused the criminals to be seized and bound; and the seven deserters having been brought back that evening, were questioned at a council of war, in which one of the conspirators was condemned to run the gauntlet, and thirty-three volunteers were condemned to the works. Their design appeared to be that of forming a league with the islanders for the destruction of the establishment, and favour their subsequent escape in some private vessel.

On the 6th, his majesty's packet the Postillion, which I had forwarded on the 3d of March for Foul Point, returned, and gave me an account, that the chief Hiavi, notwithstanding all that had been said by private merchants against the establishment, was earnestly desirous of my friendship,  
and

and begged me to establish a post near him. He assured me, that he was ready to construct a palisade according to my demands, and that he would contribute every thing in his power, or in the power of the chiefs, under his orders, to the good of the establishment. The chiefs of St. Mary came the following day to request and stipulate a treaty of peace and friendship, and to enter into mutual oaths. They, at the same time, begged me to establish a post on their island, and begged I would forget the massacre they had formerly committed against the French; to which, they said, they were driven by the cruelty and tyranny of the French themselves. I was convinced of the truth of their account, and therefore promised to forget all that had passed. We therefore entered into mutual oaths, and I engaged to send a person to open a trade of brandy and effects, for whose safety the chiefs should answer upon their own lives.

On the 9th, the interrogatories, confrontations, and circumstances, relative to the plot which had given employment to a council of war on the 5th of the same month, afforded occasion for a second council, in which the principal mover was condemned to run the gauntlet, another was flogged, and those who were less criminal were condemned to punishments adequate to their deserts.

On the 10th, his majesty's packet the Postillion being in want of careening, and having no provision of pitch and tar, they were supplied by a gum of the country, named by the islanders ditti moenti, which appeared to be of excellent use in those kinds of work.

On the 17th, I dispatched his majesty's vessel the Grand Bourbon with a detachment of a captain, one lieutenant, two serjeants, a drum, and eighteen soldiers, to Foul Point, with presents for Hiavi, the chief of that province, who had deputed  
his

his brother to me to enter into an oath of friendship in his name.

On the 20th, the Saphirobay, who, in order to regain my favour, had driven Siloulout out of their territories and degraded their chief Raoul, came to the number of twenty-two great chiefs and more than two thousand unarmed islanders; and after several testimonials of the most lively repentance, and a renewal of their oaths, I presented them with brandy and presents, which they received with marks of the greatest satisfaction and reiterated promises, that they would immediately bring their commodities, the price of which had been regulated in the Cabars. The following day the chief Raoul came to demand pardon, and permission to establish himself in his country; which I granted, on condition that he should not assume the title of prince.

On the 23d, judging it to be of the greatest importance to make myself acquainted with the internal part of the country, there, from the account of the islanders, there were very fine plains and rivers favourable to communication; I sent the Sieur Saunier, Lieutenant of a frigate, up the river of Tingballe, to make enquiries. He returned from his expedition on the 26th, and informed me, that the river was navigable ten leagues from its mouth, and ran to the North West into the country; that before it arrives at its source it is divided into two branches, each navigable for about ten leagues. He added, that this river was bordered with very fine plains in good cultivation, and mountains covered with the most beautiful timber, which might be easily and at a little expence brought down to the settlement by water. I was greatly pleased with this discovery, as I already knew that the rivers opened three very advantageous places of trade, one to the West of the  
island

island of Bombatok, the other to the North of Cape D'Ambre, and the third to the East of Angontzi, of which all the rivers of communication discharge themselves into that of Tingballe. I therefore proposed to extend the establishment and cultivation into these different provinces, as soon as I should have received more important assistance than that which I had hitherto obtained from the isle of France.

On the 27th, the Grand Bourbon was obliged to return into the harbour, and take provisions for the detachment at Foul Point.

The chiefs of the Southern provinces came with presents to enter into the oath of friendship, and begged me to send one of my officers to dwell among them, and establish a trade. I sent an interpreter, with orders to make himself acquainted with these several provinces, some of which are more than one hundred leagues distant from the chief place; and in the mean time I suspended my further orders.

On the 28th, in the evening, being informed of the death of Mr. Senan, storekeeper of the establishment, I gave instructions to my major to affix seals on his chest, and all the magazines, and place sentinels upon them. My just fears of his bad conduct were confirmed the following evening, when we came to take an inventory of the general stores, and every part of the administration which had been intrusted to him. The whole was in such bad order, that all his registers, as well of entries as deliveries, were entirely blank.

On the 29th, to hasten the advantageous communication, which I proposed to establish by land as far as the Western coast; a communication absolutely necessary to open a trade with the coast of Africa, and particularly with the province of Bombatok, which is extremely abundant in cattle  
and

and cotton; I sent Mr. Mayeur, an interpreter, with a serjeant and one hundred and fifty blacks, which were furnished by the allied chiefs, with instructions to make different establishments in his march; the first at the source of the river Tingballe, at the entry of a wood, and the other at the coming out; to construct a fort opposite Angonave, the first village of the Seclaves, dependant on Bombatok; to discover and clear the shortest road towards the Western coast; to enter into treaties of friendship with the chiefs of the interior part of the country; to convince them of the real advantages they might obtain from their commerce with the whites; to discover the most favourable branches of trade; to observe their forces, their inclinations, manners, and the climate of the country; to establish posts of rest for such escorts as might hereafter transport merchandize, and where they might deposit their effects; and lastly, to forget nothing which might contribute to the good of the establishment, and to give me advice of every thing they should do in the execution of their commission. But more especially, to exert themselves to clear the roads which were most easy to be passed through woods and over mountains. The Sieur Mayeur having received these instructions and the necessary provisions, began his march with all his people.

On the 30th, his majesty's Corvette le Neceffaire, commanded by the Sieur Cordé, arrived with the Chevalier de Sanglier, captain in my troop, with twenty volunteers, some clerks or writers, and certain individuals, who proposed to establish themselves on the island.

The position in which we then found ourselves, was so much the more deplorable, as several of my officers were either absent with detachments, or sick; the magazines were ill provided, and still worse

worse administered; the hospitals furnished with very few medicines, and we had no surgeon able to assist the volunteers, who were enervated by the indispensable works and the heat of the climate. I had been obliged to employ them in the fortifications and in filling up the marshes. The military service of the night, which our proper safety required, succeeded to the fatigues of the day.— Every moment I waited with impatience for the performance of Mr. Maillart's promises, but we were forgotten, or rather forsaken.

The first days of the month of May were so critical, and my troops were so worn out with disease, that for want of a surgeon I was myself obliged to give them that assistance which my own feelings and attachment to the service could not but impel me to administer. But I was soon reduced myself to the same unhappy situation; I withstood the attacks of the fever for a whole week, and the intolerable head-ach with which it was attended. But at last, being unable any longer to resist, I gave orders for carrying me to the island D'Aiguillon for air, and to rest myself a little after my fatigue. His majesty's vessel the Grand Bourbon, set sail on the 1st, to carry my troops to their destination. For this purpose I intrusted the command of my corps to Mr. Marin, Lieutenant Colonel, and that of the place to Mr. Marigni, my major, and departed with my family. The change of air gave me some relief, and put me in a situation to look after my family, which was likewise attacked by the fever. For want of a surgeon I myself bled my spouse with a trembling hand, and fortunately the effect was answerable to my wishes, and restored her to health.

On the 14th, the Grand Bourbon returned a second time, on pretence of wanting water, though Mr. Marigni gave me an account of a visit that  
he

he made on board the vessel, which shewed that she was provided with water for more than two months. I was then convinced, by the manœuvres of the officer who commanded the vessel, that he had particular reasons for his conduct, founded on instructions from the isle of France: but my health not permitting me to take the necessary informations respecting it, I determined to dissemble; and having learned, at the same time, that the Lieutenant Colonel and major of my corps were continually disagreeing, I embarked with my family, and returned to the main land, where my first care was to inform the chiefs not to come armed; and I gave orders to my major to watch more than ever against a surprize.

On the 18th, his majesty's vessel the Grand Bourbon, set sail for the third time.

My convalescence having required some care on my part, I deferred my operations till the first of June. I found great assistance in the care of Mr. Desmasures, master of the Bouquinville, who, in the height of my illness, entered the port. Our situation affected him so much, that he offered his services to Mr. De Marigni, who accepted them with the greatest pleasure; but I learned, with the utmost grief, that notwithstanding the attention of the Surgeon Major, there died, during my illness, Mr. Marin, Lieutenant Colonel of my corps, and fifteen volunteers. This considerable loss, and the well-founded apprehensions of its encreasing, obliged me to assemble my officers, to whom I proposed to send into the country, to enquire after a more healthy spot, to which we would immediately transport ourselves. This proposition was unanimously approved; and in consequence of their decision, Mr. De Marigni departed the next morning, with a detachment, on the river of Tingballe, in search of an elevated spot. This day

day the chiefs of the neighbouring provinces came to testify their joy at the establishment of my health, and celebrated a public rejoicing, in which musket shot were not spared.

On the 8th, Mr. Marigni returned from his excursion, and informed me, that he had observed several fine plains up the river, at three or four leagues distance from the establishment; but that this distance having appeared to him too near the marshes on the sea-side, he continued to ascend the river as far as nine leagues, or thereabouts, from its mouth, where he stopped at a place named by the islanders the Plain of Health; which appeared to him the most proper to transport the establishment, because it was extensive and well sheltered, and was commanded by a mountain of the most advantageous kind for constructing a fort, which might fire over the river and a great extent of ground. This discovery was very agreeable to me, and I immediately sent a small detachment, commanded by an officer, to encamp and make trial of the air; and upon the good report they made, I sent the Sieur Corbi with a sufficient number of workmen to construct, as speedily as possible, habitations for us, and an hospital for the convalescents.

On the 9th, the third appearance of the Grand Bourbon, with my detachment, having fully convinced me of the motives which actuated the Captain of that vessel, who, during three months, had not thought proper to leave the road, I disembarked the troops which were on board that vessel, and gave orders to Mr. Saunier, commander of the Postillion, to hold himself in readiness to sail for Foul Point.

On the 12th, upon the report of Mr. Pruneau, employed in the administration and performing the office of store-keeper, that several different thefts had

had been committed in the King's store-houses, I caused the most accurate enquiries to be made; but as they were fruitless, and I had violent suspicion of the clerks themselves, I charged one of my majors to superintend their conduct.

On the 22d, having received news from the Sieur Meyeur, that he had succeeded in opening a way to the Westward as far as the province Antanguin, and that the chiefs of that province would not permit him to proceed, I immediately sent the Sieur Corbi with a detachment of sixteen volunteers, commanded by a Serjeant, and twenty-four free Blacks likewise armed, to assist and second him in his operations.

On the 23d, the village of Sianie having taken fire, which was not above a musket shot distant from our establishment, and whose effects we could not avoid but by pulling down twenty of our houses, I judged it of the greatest importance to cause that chief to fix his dwelling on the other side of the river, and I obtained his consent, by purchasing those huts which the fire had spared.

On the 28th, his majesty's vessels the Grand Bourbon and the Postillion, being on the point of setting sail, the first for the isle of France, and the second for Foul Point; and having demanded provisions for their people, I caused all the remaining salt provisions and brandy which were in the magazines, and had been supplied from the isle of France, to be delivered to them; and upon the representations of Mr. De Marigni, that it was indispensably necessary to send back some volunteers, I gave orders to that effect; and at the same time I thought it proper to send back one of my officers, with letters addressed jointly to Messrs. De Ternay and Maillart, containing a statement of demands of things, which the establishment could not dispense with; and among others, filtering stones, medicines,

medicines, surgeons, and some blacks, accustomed to the service of the hospitals, together with persons capable of over-looking the preservation of his majesty's store-houses, and also flour and liquors. At the same time I demanded of those gentlemen, articles of trade; and assured them, that if I received those articles, I should soon be in a situation to procure them nine hundred thousand pounds of white rice, and three thousand oxen; and that it was of the greatest importance to the service, that they should send me two galliots for the exportation and importation of rice and merchandize from the chief to the out-settlements, as well as to carry my detachments, which had hitherto been obliged to repair to the place of their destination by land, across marshes, which had greatly contributed to their destruction. To these demands, I added that of a reimbursement of the sum of ninety-six thousand one hundred and sixty-six livres, which I had myself advanced to the treasury of Madagascar, upon the requisition of the officers of the administration; which sum had been employed in purchasing various kinds of merchandize, with eatables, drink, and medicines, of which the general magazine was entirely destitute: and, lastly, I observed to Mr. De Ternay, that the deplorable situation of my troops scarcely permitted them to perform the ordinary services; for which reason I requested him to order me a supply of men, and to permit the officer, whom I sent directly for that purpose to the isle of France, to raise soldiers, workmen, and engage with such inhabitants as might be willing to come with them.

July, 1774. The Grand Bourbon set sail, and I saw her depart with the hope, that my pressing representations would impel the gentlemen in the administration of the isle of France, to take those  
measures

measures which were indispensably necessary, in so urgent and grievous a situation as ours; and that I should in a short time see the supplies arrive, which had been so often promised. But a determination had been made to abandon the establishment, as will be shortly seen.

The same day I sent his majesty's brig the *Postillion* to Foul Point; and gave precise orders to the *Sieur Seunier*, commander of this vessel, to bring all the private vessels he might find in the harbours of St. Mary and Foul Point, and to make the most accurate enquiries into the conduct of individuals.

Our state of extreme weakness inspired several chiefs, who were debauched by the Saclaves, with the design to break their oath of friendship and attachment. But I was happily advised of this by the other chiefs, who were greatly attached to my person; and notwithstanding the weak state of my people, they behaved with so much firmness, as to break the measures of these treacherous chiefs, whom during the night they forced in a camp they had established in a wood, and completely routed them.

Mr. De Marigni, my major, whose former services had merited the Cross of St. Louis, and who had always seconded me in my operations, was at this time attacked with the disorder of the country. His illness became every day worse; and I had the more reason to be apprehensive for the safety of this brave officer, as he had exhausted himself by continual exertions. My son likewise was attacked. While I was thus oppressed with the mortifying reflections, into which their unhappy situation threw me, I received information, that two workmen, the one a carpenter, and the other an armourer, had deserted; and that they had been seen in the boat of the *Grand Bourbon*, before  
the

the fet fail. I immediately sent to search that vessel, but they were so well concealed, that it was impossible to find them. Justly irritated by the vile proceeding of the Captain of this vessel, who though in his majesty's service, had dared to deprive this infant establishment of such necessary workmen, (as I was by his means without an armourer, and incapable of carrying on the works) I immediately gave advice to the chiefs of the isle of France, and determined to inform the minister of this proceeding by the earliest opportunity.

My health, which had been unsettled for a long time, now began for some days to experience the most dreadful attacks. My only son Charles Maurice Louis Augustus, Baron de Benyowsky, died of the country disorder on the 11th of this month, at seven in the morning, to my extreme regret; and on the 12th, Mr. De Marigni, my major, for whose life I had been so greatly apprehensive, died at ten in the morning. He was equally lamented by myself, and all the officers of my corps. My fever became every day more violent, and forced me at last, to repair to the Plain of Health. The palisade of Louisbourg being constructed of flight wood, and being too extensive to be guarded by the few remaining hands, I had built a fort, which I named Fort Louis. It was constructed of the best wood of the country, with a triple palisade, strengthened without by a sloping of turf, and having a very solid banquette, which favoured the fire of our murdering pieces. It was besides fortified by advanced works. I left the command of this fort to Mr. De Vienne, First Lieutenant, with fifty-six men, and subaltern officers, and directed my course towards the Plain of Health, with thirty convalescents; where I arrived on the 20th of the month, and established a market for the purchase of rice, cattle, and wood; all which  
took

took place according to my desire. In a few days I began to recover, as did likewise several of the volunteers, though lodged in huts, made after the manner of the country, and not sufficiently close to keep out the rain.

On the 23d, I heard by report, that the brigantine *Le Bouquinville* had set sail. I had purchased of this vessel, for the urgent necessities of the colony, effects amounting to upwards of forty thousand livres, for which I gave my bill to the Captain on the treasury of the isle of France. During the rest of the month I was employed in causing habitations to be constructed and the ground to be cleared.

August the 5th, 1774, the Seclaves sent deputies to request the establishment of a trade among them; but they refused permission to build fortresses. This request of theirs being contrary to my views, I refused to comply with it.

On the 13th, his majesty's brig the *Postillion* returned into the harbour, and the *Sieur Saunier*, the commander, gave me an account, that on passing near *St. Mary*, he had found the *Sieur Savournin* trading contrary to the repeated prohibitions which had been communicated to him; and having at last thought proper to speak in degrading terms of the settlement and its origin, he had seized him in the King's name, and brought him to the bay; that he had likewise found the *Sieur Oliver* making preparations to trade at *Foul Point*; but that this last had followed him to give an account of his operations, and to justify himself by pleading his ignorance of the prohibition.

The common letter of the chiefs of the isle of France informed me, that having been made acquainted with the pressing wants of the establishment at *Madagascar*, they had freighted the private vessel *La Flore*, to convey stores to us. The  
general

general good, therefore, required, that this vessel should repair immediately to the chief settlement to unload, and receive in exchange, as the chiefs of the isle of France likewise noticed, a quantity of rice of equal value to the effects she might bring. I was informed on the contrary, from Messrs. Savournin and Fayeuse, Captains, that they had not two tons on board for his majesty's stores in that island; that the vessel was not freighted on account of his majesty, and that on the contrary, a written bargain had been concluded with Mr. Maillart, that they should go to Fort Dauphin, and remain there to take in supplies for the isle of France; and in consequence that he could not take in rice, notwithstanding my summons for him to take in his loading.

Justly surprized at the proceedings of the administrators of the isle of France, who by this conduct gave me reason to believe, that they were laying a snare for me, I forbid the Sieur Savournin, in his majesty's name, to trade to the Southward, upon which he proposed to pay annually to the King, the sum of one hundred thousand livres, for the exclusive right of trading from the point of the bay to Foul Point. This proposition having appeared to me to be advantageous, and for the good of the service, I executed an act agreeably to these conditions.

On the 15th, the natives of Navan, headed by the robber Siloulout, came in the night to the number of about two hundred men, with the intention of robbing the rice grounds; but having been surprized by the sentinel they fled. The following day I sent an interpreter to them, to advise them to live in peace with us; and not to repeat any such attempts, if they wished to avoid exposing themselves to my just vengeance. They answered my interpreter with their muskets, and

three of the workmen who accompanied him were slain, and six wounded. Upon receiving this account, I sent a detachment of thirty-six volunteers, commanded by proper officers, with orders to attack them in the night, and put all the blacks of Navan to the sword. But the chiefs attached to my party, not thinking it proper that I should employ whites, took charge of the expedition, which they set about with seven hundred men, well armed. To support them, I ordered Captain De Sanglier to follow them with a detachment. During these transactions, the Sieur Oliver, who had fully justified himself, and whom I had forbidden to trade in any of the offices of the establishment, perceiving that his voyage would be very chargeable, if he was forced to carry his cargo back to the isle of France, and being likewise acquainted with our pressing necessities, occasioned by the want of supplies, proposed to sell his vessel to the King, with thirty-four blacks, and some effects, which I gave orders for the purchase of, upon the valuations which were made by the storekeepers, and others employed in this service, namely :

The vessel	-	-	30,000 livres.
The slaves	-	-	10,200
The effects	-	-	1,600

---

41,800

---

On the 21st, the Sieur Savournin, and the Surgeon-major, having informed me, that there were several men on board the vessel attacked with a contagious disorder, I gave orders for them to be conveyed to the isle D'Aiguillon, to perform quarantine.

quarantine. This illness proved to be the small-pox.

On the 23d, the Chevalier Sanglier, Captain commanding the detachment I had sent against the blacks of Navan, returned to Louisbourg, and informed me, that the boat which carried his troops having been overfet, had retarded his operations; but that notwithstanding this accident, the troops of the allied chiefs had succeeded in forcing their principal village, according to my orders, though it was well defended by forts, palisades, and deep ditches; and that the nest of these robbers had become the prey of the flames.

The following day, several chiefs of various provinces, declared in their Cabar, that they would on this account, consider the Navans as traitors and perjured men; in consequence of which, they declared them slaves. The latter, on hearing this news, took refuge in the Northern parts of the island.

On the 2d of September, perceiving that my situation became daily more critical, and being continually harrassed by the intrigues of the chiefs of the isle of France, who sent emissaries to Madagascar to prejudice the natives against me; and having every reason to fear, that our weak situation might encourage them in the design they had long taken up of exterminating us, I thought it of the greatest consequence to obtain from our allies a supply of men to defend us in case of need. I therefore stipulated with them, that they should constantly keep up a force of one thousand two hundred armed men.

This nation have a custom equally cruel and strange, which they have observed from time immemorial. Any child who is born with natural defects, or even on certain days, which they consider as unlucky, is sacrificed at its birth. Most

commonly they drown them; and I had an opportunity of being a witness to this cruel custom, in descending the river in my way to the plain at Louisbourg. It happened fortunately, that on the day of my departure I had an opportunity of saving the lives of three of these unfortunate children, which they were carrying with the intention of drowning. I caused them to be conveyed to Fort Louis; and having given directions for summoning a grand Cabar, I caused all the chiefs to enter into an oath, that they would not in future practise any such act of cruelty. I considered this as the happiest day of my life, from the abolition of this execrable custom, which was the effect either of religion, or some very detestable prejudice.

On the 4th, I was advised by one of the chiefs of Antambon, that the chiefs Mahertom, Raboet, Campan, and Saphirobay, had entered into a combination to assassinate me. I immediately sent an interpreter to these chiefs, to enquire into their intentions. Mahertom denied that he had entered into the conspiracy, but Raboet, having avowed that he was the eighth person who took the oath, the blacks could with difficulty restrain themselves from rushing on him, and putting him to death.

On the 5th, Fort Augustus, which I had caused to be constructed on the mountain of the plain I before spoke of, being finished, I sent sixteen men to guard it, until further orders from the Court; and I distributed among them six pieces of ground in the environs, for the commencement of a vigorous cultivation.

On the 7th, upon the report of the commanding officer, that very considerable thefts had been made out of the royal magazines, of which the storekeeper had not given any account, I caused the latter to be arrested, and proceeded to interrogate

two persons of the name of Picard and Julien, who had been accused of selling the stores to the natives. The result of this proceeding evinced, that these two men, who by the negligence of the storekeeper had almost the entire management of the effects, had appropriated a considerable part to their own use. They were thereupon sent off, namely, Julien to France in the Postillion, and Picard to the isle of France, with information of the proceedings against them; and the effects which were found in the hands of these two criminals were returned to the storekeeper.

On the 8th, the Saclaves came to sell two hundred and fifty oxen, which I was very ready to purchase, as I was convinced of the great advantage of carrying on a reciprocal commerce between the settlement and that rich province.

On the 12th, Deputies arrived from Hiavi, grand chief of Foul Point, with one hundred and twenty armed men, who informed me, that the object of their coming was to support me against the Saphirobay, who had entered into a secret alliance with the blacks of the Southern part of the island. They informed me, that their small party would be reinforced by a much more considerable number. The Saphirobay being informed of this proceeding, prepared to abandon their country; but when my interpreters informed them, that their pardon depended only on their repentance, and the confirmation of the oath which I had required of them, to discontinue the horrible custom of destroying their new born infants, in the cases before-mentioned, they all repaired to Louisbourg on the 13th, with their wives, who, being convinced by my reasoning, entered with the greatest satisfaction into the oath of never sacrificing their infants in future, as they had formerly been accustomed to do. Such an interesting engagement was naturally

naturally succeeded by a grand entertainment; and I thought it becoming the honour of the nation to contribute to it, for which reason I gave orders for the distribution of brandy and other presents.

On the 14th, several chiefs of St. Mary and other allied provinces, sent deputies, with near six hundred men, to warn me, that the Saphirobai were troublesome and treacherous people; and that, notwithstanding their repeated oaths, they continued to engage the Southern provinces in their party to exterminate us; and that they came with their forces to support me against them. The position in which I found myself after this advertisement, led me to the following reflections: I was but too well acquainted with the treacherous disposition of the Saphirobai; and their punishment would be merely an act of justice: but in making war upon them, I exposed my men, who are of such value in this country; besides which, in destroying this nation, I should put an end to the cultivation of the ground; and the indisposition of the isle of France, or rather of its chiefs, gave me the greatest reason to fear, that we should not long receive from them even the most indispensable supplies. It would therefore be evidently a great disadvantage to the establishment, to drive away a people, who being furnished with the most essential articles of subsistence and trade, were the only support upon which I could depend. From these reflections I thought it of the greatest advantage to gain the Southern provinces by presents, to restrain the Saphirobai by flattering promises; and to engage the Sambarives to come and take possession of the lands of the Saphirobai, in case the latter should force me by their treachery, to drive them out of their province.

On the 15th, I convened a general assembly, where the oaths of fidelity were renewed; and it

was

was at the same time agreed, that every chief who hereafter should hold a secret meeting, should be driven from his village, his lands should be confiscated to the establishment, and his family reduced to slavery. That all those who should not assist the establishment in case of an attack, should lose their lands, and that the Saphirobai should pay twenty oxen as a satisfaction, which was immediately done.

At the end of the Cabar, all the women of several provinces appeared, who were desirous of renewing, and causing the chiefs to renew the oath, that they should never destroy their children, upon any pretence whatsoever, and they strongly intreated me to send for my spouse, who on account of her ill health, had been obliged to go to the isle of France for the change; in order, as they said, to deposit in her hands an oath, which in the nature of things, regarded women more particularly, since it tended to the preservation of their immediate offspring. They assured me, that their demands being conformable to their laws, they hoped soon to see my spouse. This request appeared to me so natural, and so conformable to the views which I had proposed of gaining their confidence, that I began to think very seriously of sending for Madame Benyowsky, even at the risk of her health.

On the 19th, I sent the interpreter Descotti to the Sambarives, to engage that great province to attach themselves entirely to us; and I returned to the plain, where nothing remarkable had happened since my departure.

On the 20th, a private vessel, named the Belle Artier, commanded by the Sieur Auger, arrived in the harbour, with an order from Mr. Maillart, for three hundred thousand pounds of white rice, for the subsistence of the isle of France; but having  
learned

learned from the Captain, that this rice was on his own account, and that he had purchased it of Mr. Maillart, at the rate of sixteen livres the hundred weight, with the intention of carrying it for sale to the Cape of Good Hope, I refused to deliver it to him, as I could sell it for twenty-two on the spot; and as the Sieur Auger begged me to give him the value in slaves, I agreed very willingly, because by that means, I should clear myself of my slaves, of whom I had a number in a situation where they could easily desert.

By the same vessel I received a letter from Messrs. De Ternay and Maillart, in which I saw with the greatest pleasure, that those gentlemen had sent to Madagascar a store-keeper, and people to be employed in the administration, together with the Sieur Des Affisses, to perform the office of supercargo; and that the latter was coming in the vessel La Belle Poule, which was expected to arrive very soon at Louisbourg with stores. I therefore gave orders for making an inventory, in the presence of the Sieur Aumon, store-keeper, and his people, of all the effects in the King's magazines, and directed that they should be put into his hands.

The day after the arrival of these new officers, I was informed, that, not content with the common women, the young men had entered into all the huts of the blacks, and attempted, sword in hand, to force the husbands to abandon their wives to them. The complaints which at the same time were brought by the chiefs of the Saphirobai, having justified this report, I sent a guard to search for these people, who arrested them, and they were thrown into prison.

But as our new surgeons were among them, and these were absolutely necessary for the service of the hospitals, I was obliged to set them at liberty, as well

well as the clerks of the administration, who had fallen into the same imprudent behaviour; and from whose misconduct I had great reason to fear, that some abuses would take place in the store-houses, particularly in the account of receipts and disbursements. But as Mr. Maillart in his last letter, had conjured me to place entire confidence in the persons he had nominated, I agreed to his demand, though I could not but be convinced, that the choice he had before made at first of a supercargo, had been attended with considerable loss of the King's stores.

On the 24th, I put my packets for the Court into the hands of the Sieur Saunier, Commander of his Majesty's brig the *Postillon*, with my instructions, and twenty-five blacks, addressed to the Sieur Percheron, agent of the islands of France and Bourbon, to be remitted to the Sieur Auger at the Cape, in payment of the three hundred thousand pounds of rice,\* and he set sail for France the next day.

On the 28th, in consequence of the packets I received from the Sieur La Boulaye, officer in my corps, whom I had sent to the isle of France to raise men, which were wanting in the establishment; by which I understood, that he had succeeded after many difficulties, in engaging several workmen, and that he waited only for a favourable opportunity of forwarding them to Madagascar. I judged it of the greatest importance to hasten their passage; for which purpose I dispatched his Majesty's vessel *La Coureur*, commanded by the Sieur Desmouffieux, officer of the blue, in whose hands I put dispatches for Messrs. De Ternay and Maillart;

\* After the word rice (*ris*) in the MS. follow the words *Je le cherchai en meme temps des esclaves portés No. 16*, which I have not attempted to translate. W. N.

in which I informed the latter of the behaviour of the clerks he had sent, and strongly pressed Mr. De Ternay for a supply of men to reinforce my troops, in order that I might be able to carry my establishments into the country of the Seclaves.

On the 30th, a private brig, La Flore, commanded by the Sieur Fayeuse, sailed out of the harbour with one hundred and sixty million pounds of rice, which he had received in exchange for sea salt, which was placed in his Majesty's storehouse.

On the 1st of October, 1774, the interpreter whom I had sent to Manahar, sent information, that he had succeeded very well in the mission I had intrusted to his care; that the Sambarives had nothing more at heart than to secure our friendship; that they were ready to quit their mountains to come and inhabit the lands of the Saphirobai, where they could supply the establishment with four thousand men in time of war. But that as the interpreter had not spoken to them but in his own name, pursuant to my orders, they were then about to send several of their chiefs as deputies to me, to conclude this affair, of such great importance to themselves, since it secured them my friendship, and placed them under my safeguard. I was greatly pleased with this good news, as I found myself by that means in a situation to support a war against the Saphirobai, which was almost inevitable; and I immediately established a post with that friendly nation, to secure their attachment.

On the 2d, I repaired to the plain, where I knew that Messrs. Mayeur and Corbi, whom I had sent upon discoveries to the Westward, were to make their rendezvous. As I ascended the river, I received great satisfaction in seeing several places lined with inhabitants, who made repeated discharges of  
their

their musquets, and cried out in their language, Long live our father.

On my arrival at the plain, I learned from the Sieurs Corbi and Mayeur, that in passing through the interior parts of the island, which was extremely rich in oxen, cotton, ebony, and gum guttæ, they had found all the inhabitants very much disposed to join my interests; but that the knowledge they had of the small number of my forces, did not permit them to turn their backs on the Arabians, who had long frequented their coast, and had acquired a certain empire over them, as well by the quantity of merchandize they brought, as by the forces they could oppose against them. But that they waited, in order to unite with me, only for the moment in which they could face the Arabs.

Upon this report, I should have been desirous of making a new expedition into the country, more especially as these two officers added, that the road of communication required only a common share of labour, to make it practicable by land: But the want of assistance on the part of the isle of France, obliged me to suspend this important operation. The Sieurs Mayeur and Corbi had purchased eight hundred oxen, in the two or three days journey they had made.

On the 7th, in consequence of the arrival of his Majesty's frigate the Belle Poule, commanded by the Chevalier Grenier, I left the plain and returned to Louisbourg. On my arrival at Mahetombe, I learned from Mr. Sanglier, Commandant in my absence, that Mr. Des Assises, the supercargo, had arrived in the Belle Poule, with the assistants. I immediately repaired to Louisbourg to receive him in his quality of supercargo, and the Sieur Aumont, as storekeeper.

The

The packets of Messrs. De Ternay and Maillart informed me, that the Sieur Des Affisses had received from the treasury of the island, a sum more than sufficient to answer the appointments of my corps for a year. I therefore required pay for my troop for six months; but instead of satisfying my demand, he replied, that he had not only received no sum at the isle of France, but on the contrary had advanced out of his own pocket, sums for the purchase of the most necessary articles for the establishment. I therefore again adopted the expedient of applying to the purses of my friends to replenish the treasury, upon the demand of the supercargo and treasurer, with a sum which might pay the troops for the six months which were due.

Some days after his arrival, the Sieur Des Affisses convened several chiefs unknown to me, to whom he delivered a cask of brandy, and assured them that he was come to support them against me, in case I should do them any injury; and that they might from thenceforth consider him as their protector, because he was come to Madagascar for that purpose, and to superintend my conduct. This criminal proceeding in a person subordinate to me, was doubtless deserving of exemplary punishment; but, as the transaction related to myself personally, I was content with reprimanding him in a very serious manner, on his absurd conduct. He appeared to be affected with my remonstrances. But a few days afterwards, I had reason to be convinced that he was, in more than one respect, the creature of Mr. Maillart.

The continual chagrin and disquiet which I suffered, destroyed my health, and reduced me to such an extremity, that the surgeons despaired of my life. In the height of my illness, the Sieur Des Affisses requested my officers to meet at his habitation;

tion ; and on their refusal, he waited upon them, and declared that he had particular orders from Mr. Maillart to seize all my effects and papers, in case my life was in danger ; and that in consequence of the evident danger in which I then was, he requested them to assist him in carrying his orders into effect. The reply of my officers consisted of a threat of vengeance, if he should ever dare in future to make such a proposal to them. At the moment, however, in which the *Sieur Des Affisses* condemned me to death, a favourable crisis dissipated my disorder, by a spontaneous evacuation of bile, and placed me entirely out of danger. Great indeed was my surprize, when my officers came to express their joy on my convalescence ; and when I heard at the same time, from their report, of the conduct which this chief storekeeper had adopted with respect to me, I immediately sent for him, and reproached him for his conduct. Confounded as he was at the disclosure of his proceedings, he avowed, in the presence of my officers, that all which he had hitherto done, had been founded on particular instructions of Mr. Maillart. He at the same time put into my hands these instructions, which might more properly be called a defamatory libel, of which I immediately sent a copy to the Minister, addressing my packet to him by the *Chevalier Grenier*, Commander of his Majesty's frigate the *Belle Poule*.

On the 20th, the *Sieur Des Affisses* requested me to sign a verbal process, declaring, that several considerable thefts had been committed in his Majesty's storehouses ; and in particular, that seventeen casks of wine had leaked out since his arrival. I contented myself with replying, that I did not know what it was to affix my signature as authority for misconduct ; that I was by no means ignorant of the exorbitant consumption of wine by himself  
and

and his people, while my officers could not have a single bottle; and that with regard to the effects which had been stolen, I was well informed of his conduct with the women, and that he was too well acquainted with the thieves to think of forwarding any proceedings against them. This reply confounded him, and obliged him to retire without attempting to make any answer.

This misconduct on the part of administration was so much the more infamous, not only because the magazines suffered, but as the articles of trade cost these gentlemen nothing more than the trouble of drawing out a verbal process, they every day purchased articles at an exorbitant price; inso-much that it became necessary to pay three livres for articles, which before their arrival might have been had for ten sols. I therefore gave orders, that all the provisions which the blacks were desirous of selling, should be exposed in the market; and at the same time forbade the purchase of them at a higher rate than the price settled at the preceding Cabars.

The Sieur Des Affisses, notwithstanding this new prohibition, which was so conformable to sound policy, was the first to infringe it, by directing all the provisions which the blacks brought to the Bazar, to be conveyed to him; but the officer of the guard did his duty, and the Sieur Des Affisses was punished, by the confiscation of what he had purchased.

We were still but weakly fortified, and the houses which had been constructed according to the manner of the country, began to decay. I thought it necessary therefore to work, both on the fortifications and on the construction of other habitations. I caused to be drawn up, or rather I drew up myself a plan, plate 19, fig. 2. for the construction of a fort; a house for the Governor, built with boards,

boards, and one hundred and thirty log-houses. I was not a little surprized to hear the Sieur Des Affisses, animated by the disposition of Mr. Maillart, openly exclaim against these indispensable labours. He asserted, that he knew no chief but Mr. Maillart; and that his orders were contrary to these augmentations. He not only expressed his desire, that they should not take place, but threatened likewise, that he would inform the blacks that he would not pay any of them who might be employed. This absurd behaviour extorted no other emotion but compassion; and as from that moment I considered this intendant as a designing person, though incapable of executing a project so badly conceived, I caused several chiefs to be assembled, in order to propose this enterprize to them, being determined to apply again to the purses of my friends, to pay their salaries, in case the Sieur Des Affisses persevered in his refusal to pay them. Their reply confirmed me in the opinion I had conceived of that gentleman. They all asserted, that they would not work, because the Sieur Des Affisses had assured them, that I had only a very short time to remain at Madagascar; but that he would not pay them if they worked for the establishment by my orders. I dismissed this weak set of men immediately with indignation.

Such was the execution of the brilliant promises of the Intendant of the isle of France, even by a man whom he had nominated his sub-delegate. My troops were exhausted by continual labour and fatigue, and the officers were threatened to be deprived of the fruit of their labour, by the information which the storekeeper gave them, that they should soon be dismissed by a new commander, whom he assured them would be substituted in my place in a short time.

The

The islanders were thus prejudiced against the establishment, by the public calumnies of those whose duty it was to contribute most to their union. The individuals composing the establishment, being extenuated by continual fatigue, and seeing themselves abandoned and betrayed at every step they took; the troops in want of cloathing, badly lodged, and very imperfectly fortified.—Such was our most critical situation; and the more especially it was to be regretted, as it was the work of persons charged with orders to give every possible assistance to an establishment which was founded on the most extensive views.

On the 2d of November, the *Sieur Des Affisses*, constantly animated by the spirit of *Mr. Maillart*, assembled at his house all the clerks and people employed in the administration, and in their presence drew out a verbal process, importing, that the particular instructions of the *Intendant* of the *isle of France*, which he had through fear put into my hands, were written by himself, and that *Mr. Maillart* had no share in them; but that circumstances having obliged him to draw out this false piece, he avowed its want of foundation. I was immediately informed of this vile proceeding, and went without delay to the rascal, with my Major; and having ordered him to communicate his papers, the original of the private instructions, signed by *Mr. Maillart*, was found, and admitted by the impostor.

The rest of the month was employed in such works as the volunteers of my corps were capable of, and in which the convalescents were so zealous as to join us. The other absurd circumstances of the conduct of *Messrs. Des Affisses* and his people, which were always founded on the particular and verbal instructions of *Mr. Maillart*, being only a repetition of those with which he had begun on his  
first

first landing, I think it unnecessary to repeat them, but shall only observe, that in order to excite the islanders to work who were disgusted by the pernicious conversation of the principal store-keeper, I employed my own black domestics, and those whom I employed in my house, as I chose rather to deprive myself of their personal services, than omit any occasion of contributing to the good of the establishment.

The first part of the month of December was employed in the usual works; but on the 11th, I saw with the greatest satisfaction, the arrival of his Majesty's brig *Le Coureur*, with my spouse, whose presence was so necessary for the abolishment of the cruel custom of destroying of the children born on days which were reckoned unlucky, or which were in some respects imperfect. The same vessel brought the *Sieur de la Bouliaye*, whom I had sent to the isle of France, on the urgent business of the colony, with orders to engage, with the consent of Mr. De Ternay, the proper workmen to forward the buildings, which we could not dispense with. He informed me, that he had brought with him thirteen workmen, six soldiers, and two passengers, in the number of which was the *Marquis D'Albergotti De Vezas*, Chevalier of St. Louis, and ancient Captain of infantry, who came to offer his services; which, however, I could not accept without having received the consent of the Minister. His long standing in the service, and his misfortunes, which had so much resemblance to my own situation, attached me to this officer, to whom I offered a lodging and my table, which he accepted.

On the 13th, the women of several provinces, being informed of the arrival of my spouse, came to take the oath before her, that they would never sacrifice any child hereafter to their criminal cus-

toms ; and it was further agreed, that those who should break their oath, should be made slaves, and exported out of the country ; and that the children which were born with any defect, which, according to their customs, might have formerly been the cause of putting them to death, should in future be sent to the establishment, to be brought up at our charge, without its being in the power of the parents to reclaim them.

This oath was succeeded by a festival, in testimony of the general satisfaction.

After terminating this business so important to the establishment, and so advantageous to humanity, I directed my views to the perfect knowledge of the Northern coast of the island ; in consequence of which, I sent the *Sieur* Mayeur, with eighty armed blacks to support him in his march, with orders to go in the *Periagua*, and examine all the harbours, bays, and rivers on that coast, and engage the principal chiefs of the provinces in our interests ; at the same time that he should excite them by presents, if necessary, to take part against the *Seclaves*, whose enemies I knew they had always been ; and to finish his mission, by acquiring an accurate knowledge of the island *Nossebe* ; after which he was directed to return by land to *Louisbourg*, to give an account of his observations.

At the same time I gave orders to part of my troops to proceed upon discovery of the rivers and plains, which were in the vicinity of the chief settlement ; and directed the *Sieur* Garaut de *Beaupreau*, chief engineer of the island, to embark in his Majesty's brig *Le Coureur*, to make a plan of the Southern coast, as far as *Fort Dauphin*. I likewise sent three *Periaguas* to sound the Bay of *Antongil*, both on the Eastern and Western shores.

On

On the 19th, perceiving that the *Sieur Des Affisses*, the principal store-keeper, persisted in not lending any assistance in the works essential to the establishment, and that he persevered in exciting the province of the *Saphirobai* against me, to the chiefs of which he had insinuated, that by declaring themselves against me, they would do a thing very agreeable to the government of the isle of France, I thought it necessary, at last, to take an effectual resolution. In consequence of which, I assembled the officers of the corps to explain to them our circumstances, and the conduct of the *Sieur Des Affisses*, and requested their advice respecting what they might think proper to be done in the case. Their opinion was agreeable to my own: I therefore gave orders to put him under an arrest, which was done the same hour. But as it was necessary, in the mean time, to keep up a regular account, I nominated Mr. Aumont to supply his place.

The report of the disgrace of the principal store-keeper, destroyed the hopes of the *Saphirobai* chiefs; and they came to the number of seven, on the 21st, with six hundred workmen, to be employed in the works I had determined to construct. These chiefs engaged besides with me, to supply the settlement with six thousand pieces of wood, and four thousand madriers, or planks. This prospect of the return of the islanders to our interest, tended greatly to dissipate my apprehensions.

On the 24th, the two detachments which I had sent upon discovery, returned from their expeditions; and the officers in command gave me an exact account in the form of an itinerary, or journal, from which I was assured, that this immense country abounded with the most beautiful plains, watered with rivers; and that colonists only were

wanting to turn them to the greatest advantage. Sugar, cotton, indigo, coffee, tobacco, and all other productions, were found in abundance.

On the 22d, the brig *Le Coureur* being ready to set sail, I gave orders to the *Sieur Desmouffieux*, with an interpreter and a detachment, to embark, to make discoveries on the Southern part of the island. The same day I sent *Mr. Perthuis*, Lieutenant, with *Mr. Rosiere*, and a detachment of six soldiers, and one hundred and eighty armed natives of the country, to make the same expedition by land.

The latter days of this year offered nothing remarkable; the whole corps was employed in the works, which I had distributed among them in several gangs.

On the 29th, the Surgeon Major informed me, that the *Sieur Des Affilles*, by his irregular conduct, had contracted a disorder, which his advanced age ought to have secured him from. Being actuated by compassion for his situation, I sent *Mr. De Sanglier* to him, to exhort him to a more regular conduct; and at the same time I offered to re-establish him in his charge, on condition that he should declare publicly, and in a Cabar of the natives of the country, which I would convene for that purpose, that all which he had said and done, was by the direction of a party in the isle of France, whose government was jealous of the flourishing state to which Madagascar would arrive under my conduct; and that he had followed this mode of proceeding, only to gain the favour of *Mr. Mailart*, who was exceedingly jealous of every good office which could be performed in favour of Madagascar.

On the return of *Mr. De Sanglier*, I was surpris'd to hear that *Mr. Des Affilles* had accepted my proposition; and that he was truly sorry for every thing

thing that he had done, contrary to my intentions; and lastly, that he would accept his charge, and promised to conduct himself in future with moderation. The voluntary return of so dangerous a person, gave me great satisfaction; and I immediately sent him an order to continue in the service. This domestic pacification was not, however, sufficient to calm my apprehensions, as the afflicting view of the state of the establishment, persecuted by the isle of France, and abandoned by Europe, continually presented itself to my mind.

January the 1st, 1775. Having convened the Saphirobai chiefs, the submission of the principal Intendant was made before them; and I had the satisfaction to see, that many of the chiefs looked on him with contempt. At the breaking up of the Cabar, the chief Raoul asked to speak with me in secret; and informed me, that the Cimanongou chief of the Seclaves, of the province of Antongin, had joined with the King of Bojana to declare war against me; that this chief Cimanongou had sent envoys to the Saphirobai, to invite them to join him against the establishment; and that several of them were disposed to accede to his proposition, though others were determined to adhere to their resolution of keeping their engagements with me.

This important advice required precaution on my part, for it was certain that the Seclaves were able to bring an army into the field of forty thousand fighting men. But as it would have been dangerous to have shewn my apprehensions, I dissembled, and caused the public works to be carried on with greater spirit.

On the 7th, I received letters from the Sieur Mayeur, dated from Angontzi, in which he gave me an advantageous description of that province. Its rich productions and abundance of cattle, sur-  
passed

passed my expectation; for which reason I determined, notwithstanding my apprehensions of the Seclaves, to send a detachment to establish posts. The details which Mr. Mayeur gave me of the disposition of the chiefs of this province, led me to hope, that I might engage them to assist me in case of need. Mr. Mayeur informed me in his letter, that he durst not venture to continue his progress without reinforcements. I therefore gave immediate orders to Serjeant Longueteau, to follow him with two hundred and fifty armed natives; and to remain subject to his orders. The following days were employed on the fortifications, and filling up the quay, which I had raised upon the shore within the bay.

On the 12th, I received deputies from the Sambarives and Antimaroa, who offered me five thousand men, to support a war against the Seclaves.

On the 28th, about midnight, I was alarmed at hearing three shot fired on the banks of the river. I gave immediate orders to the picquet guard to repair to the spot, but the detachment returned without having made any discovery. This alarm produced no other consequence, than that of affrighting Mr. Des Affisses, the intendant, who ran intirely naked into the fort. This day I received information, that the navigation of the boats, coming down the river of Tingballe, and from Ranoumena, had become dangerous, on account of the different ambuscades which the ill disposed natives had placed to fire on them. I gave orders, therefore, to open a communication by land, and for this work I engaged the Rohandrian Sance to send me four thousand men.

From the 19th to the 28th, the settlement was employed on making the above mentioned communication by land.

On the 30th, I received an account from the posts of Foul Point, Maffoualla, Mananhar, Tamatava, and Angontzi, that articles of trade were abundant, but that the store-houses were empty. This information induced me to purchase the entire cargo of the brig La Jollie Bourbonoise, amounting to sixty-eight thousand livres, which I disbursed out of my own pocket upon the treasurer's receipt. The same day I received letters from the administrators of the isle of France, which tended to convince me of the intrigues and cabals which they employed, to deprive me of the confidence of the Minister, and to excite the enmity of the natives against me. I received more certain information on this subject from the Marquis D'Albergotti, ancient Captain in the service of France, who was persecuted by the government of the isle of France, and had retired to Madagascar under my protection.

February the 1st. I received information, that Mahertomp, a chief established near our principal settlement, had engaged with the Seclaves to assassinate me. As soon as I was assured of this by sufficient evidence, I went to him unexpectedly with several chiefs, to remonstrate with him on his treachery. He acknowledged his crime, and intreated forgiveness for having failed in his engagements; but his subjects declared, that they would not have any further concern with so perfidious a man. So that he was proscribed, and banished by his own people.

On the 2d, Mr. Corbi, one of my most confidential officers, in concert with the interpreter, informed me, that the old negress, Sufanna, whom I had brought from the isle of France, and who in her early youth had been sold to the French, and had lived upwards of fifty years at the isle of France, had reported, that her companion the  
daughter

daughter of Rohandrian Ampanfacabé Ramini Larizon, having likewise been made prisoner, was sold to the foreigners; and that she had certain marks that I was her son. This officer represented likewise to me, that in consequence of her report, the Sambarive nation had held several Cabars, to declare me the heir of Ramini, and, consequently, proprietor of the province of Mananhar, and successor to the title of Ampanfacabé, or supreme chief of the nation; a title which since the death of Ramini Larizon, had been extinct.

This information appeared to me of the greatest consequence; and I determined to take the advantage of it, to conduct that brave and generous nation to a civilized state, and the establishment of a solid and permanent government. Its situation, its population, the fertility and excellency of its soil and climate, with a variety of other circumstances, conspired to induce me to lay a foundation for the establishment of a power, founded upon national liberty. But as I had no person to whom I could intrust the secret of my mind, I lamented to myself at the reflection how blind the Minister of Versailles was to the true interests of France. I therefore contented myself with giving particular instructions to Mr. Corbi, respecting the answers he should make to such of the natives as might question him on this subject. On the same day I interrogated Sufanna on the report she had spread concerning my birth. The good old woman threw herself at my knees, and excused herself by confessing, that she had acted intirely upon a conviction of the truth. For she said, that she had known my mother, whose physiognomy resembled mine; and that she had herself been inspired in a dream by the Zahanhar, to publish the secret. Her manner of speaking convinced me, that she really believed what she said; I therefore embraced her,  
and

and told her, that I had reasons for keeping the secret respecting my birth; but that, nevertheless, if she had any confidential friends, she might acquaint them with it. At these words she arose, kissed my hands, and declared, that the Sambarive nation was informed of the circumstance, and that the Rohandrian Raffangour waited only for a favourable moment, to acknowledge the blood of Ramini.

The time from the third to the sixth, was employed in digging a canal of communication between the river and the harbour. This was perfected in four days, though it was fifteen hundred toises in length. But as I employed for this purpose near six thousand natives of the country, the whole was performed with the greatest ease.

On the 7th, the chief Ciewi, of the Sambarive nation, came to present two hundred young men of his nation, to serve me in quality of volunteers. I accepted the offer of this brave people, and gave orders immediately for forming them into a regular company. The officers La Tour, La Boullaye, and Evally, were charged with the discipline of this new troop, of which I appointed the son of Rohandrian Raffangour commander.

On the 8th, Mr. Des Affisses, the intendant, represented to me, that he was desirous of resigning his employment, and retiring to the isle of France. I agreed to his demand with so much the more satisfaction, as he was of no use to me. But as it was necessary that his accounts should be first made up, I allowed him fourteen days for that purpose.

On the 9th, I received an account from an interpreter, of the name of D'Ecolle, that an old man in the province of Mananhar, had spread prophecies concerning a general change of government in the island, and that he had asserted, that  
the

the descendant of Ramini would rebuild the town of Palmire. He added, that these predictions had occasioned a tumult among the people, who being informed that the Sambarives had declared me to be a descendant of the line of Ramini, required their chiefs to send an embassy to me, to enquire into the fact; and in case it should prove true, to bring me with them, and assure me of the submission of their province. From this resolution, the Rohandrians, Anacandrins, and Voadziri, had nominated chiefs, who were immediately to begin their journey by sea.

On the 10th, I made an excursion to the plain, and to fort Augustus, to hasten the works of the fortifications.

On the 11th, Mr. Mayeur, chief interpreter, informed me, that two Saphirobai chiefs had arrived, and demanded an audience. As soon as they were introduced, they declared, that being informed that I had concluded a treaty with the Sambarives, their enemies, they had determined to employ all their powers in preventing the consequences of such an alliance, which, in effect, was an infringement of all the oaths I had entered into with them; and that, in a word, they would rather declare in favour of the Seclaves, than become connected with the Sambarive nation. They ended by representing, that my behaviour to Mahertomp had been violent; and that they had thought it proper to receive him into the Cabar, notwithstanding the sentence against him. Justly irritated at this declaration, I made no other answer, than by an expression of indignation, and commanding them immediately to withdraw.

The same day Raoul Rohandrian of the Saphirobai, who had informed me of the cabals of the Seclaves, came with excuses respecting the proceedings of his nation, at the instigation of old Mahertomp;

tomp; and assured me, that for his part he was ready to repeat his oath of fidelity and attachment to my person; and he put his son into my hands as a hostage.

After having treated him with the greatest attention, I requested that he would let me know the true reason of the opposition of the Saphirobai chiefs; and he told me, that the ancestors of Mahertomp, and of Rohandrian Onglahe, had been concerned in the massacre of the family of Ramini Larizon, after which they had assumed the Sovereignty of several districts, to the prejudice of the Sambarive nation, who being at that moment assured that they had found a descendant of the blood of Ramini, reclaimed, as his right, the different districts separated from the provinces of Antimaroa.

Upon this information, I asked, whether his interest were not likewise to declare against the Sambarives; and he replied, that it was not; giving at the same time as a reason, that he was descended from the race of Safe Hibrabim, whose family had settled in the place where he dwelt, under the protection of Ramin Ampanfacabé, and that he at present was reckoned of the class of the Saphirobai, only because he was desirous of preserving his possessions. I then questioned him, whether he had any knowledge of the heir of Ramini, whom the Sambarives announced; but as he answered, that he knew not a word on that subject, I thought it unnecessary to question him further; and assured him of the constant friendship which I should always preserve for him and his whole family.

Contented with my declaration, he assured me, that he was desirous of supporting the establishment with all his force. But he intreated me to consider, that in case the establishment should be given  
up,

up, what would be his situation when exposed alone to the mercy of a body of enraged chiefs, who would not fail to sacrifice him and all his family to their resentment. This reasoning appeared just; and with a view to give him perfect satisfaction, I declared that my only request was, that he would remain neuter.

On the 12th, the engineer who had been employed on the work of the road leading to the plain, and towards Ranoumena, informed me that the whole was finished; and I determined to inspect this work myself the following day. This day I received an account that the Saphirobai had assembled in troops.

On the 13th, I went on horseback from Louifbourg to the plain, where I was astonished to find the road finished in so short a time. It was four toises broad, six French leagues in length, and had a ditch on each side to carry off the waters. I thought it particularly became me to reward the people who had performed this work; I therefore gave each of them a yard of blue cloth, and a bottle of brandy. To secure the communication of this road, I gave orders immediately to raise a redoubt on the height of Mananbia, on which I built houses for twenty-four men.

From the 14th to the 16th, I was employed visiting the posts dependant on Louifbourg; and I distributed several pieces of ground to the Europeans at the plain of Health, and at the plain of Fort St. John, on the bank of the great river. All these grounds naturally produced sugar, cotton, indigo, tobacco, and Tacamahaca wood.

On the 17th, having returned to Louifbourg, I gave orders for continuing the building, and increasing the town; after which, on the 18th, I embarked in the country boats for Angontzi. This voyage employed eight days, and I took the opportunity

portunity of visiting all the chiefs established on the coast, who expressed the most sincere attachment to me. Upon my arrival at Angontzi, I was charmed with the situation which my engineer had chosen to establish the settlement; my wishes on this occasion for an accession of force to take advantage of the gifts which nature so prodigally held out, were great; but, alas, the hour of their accomplishment was not at hand, and it was in vain that the beauty of the situation, the goodness of the soil, together with the mild and affable character of the inhabitants, led me to form projects I was unable to accomplish.

The Rohandrian of Angontzi assembled a Cabar on the 27th, in which I received in person the oath of attachment and alliance of that nation. The rest of the month passed in entertainments, which were given by the chiefs.

March the 2d, 1775, having received advice by land, that a number of the deputies of the Southern provinces had repaired to Louisbourg, where they waited for me with impatience; and that the Saphirobai had burnt a village belonging to Manonganon, I determined immediately to return; and as the road by land, though difficult, was the shortest, I determined to go that way. The chief of Angontzi, being informed of my decision, ordered his litter for me, with six hundred armed men for a guard. I seized an instant before my departure, to represent the advantages that would result from a road being made between Angontzi and Louisbourg, he promised six thousand men for this work, provided the people of Antimaroa would supply the same number.

On the 6th, after a rather tedious journey, I arrived at last at Louisbourg, where I was agreeably surprized to find that the marsh at the entrance of the town was intirely filled up. I was indebted for  
this

this work to the good will of the same friends who had made the road to the plain. This day I received the reports concerning the different parts of the service of the establishment, with which I was perfectly well satisfied, and convinced that nothing had stood still during my absence. Mr. Sanglier, who had commanded in my absence, likewise informed me, that the deputies of five of the Southern provinces, had demanded a conference in a Cabar; and that there were likewise six private chiefs, who had made the same request. In consequence of this, I ordered preparations to be made for holding a Cabar on the following day.

On the 7th, after having rested myself, I conferred with Messrs. Mayeur and Corbi, respecting the different interests which had induced the deputies and the chiefs to have recourse to me; and after having received the necessary information, I caused the Cabar to be assembled, at which the deputies were admitted one after the other. The first was from the province of Mananhar; the second from Tamatava; the third from the island of St. Mary; the fourth from Manauzar; and the fifth from Matatava. After the deputies, I received the chiefs; and as their interests were one and the same, I entered into one common oath with them: and when I had made presents to them in return for those they had brought, I dismissed them, because the affairs they were charged with required their speedy return into their respective provinces.

On the 8th, Mr. Gareau de Boispreaux, engineer in chief, proposed to me to erect a light-house on the isle D'Aiguillon, and to erect a flag-staff on the point of land, at the entrance of the river. He likewise requested that the people who had been employed by him before, might continue to serve him. I agreed to his request, and gave him the necessary orders and powers.

On

On the 9th, having received a visit from the chief Raoul, I proposed to him to employ his subjects in making a road towards Angontzi; and after a long conference, I prevailed on him to promise four thousand men for the service; Manonganon and Mandinque, two other chiefs, promised likewise two thousand men. Being thus assured of sufficient assistance, I gave charge of the work to M. de Boispreaux, the engineer, and his assistant, M. de Rosieres. The plan was made the same day, and M. de Rosieres departed for Angontzi, to begin the operations on that side; while Mr. Gareau de Boispreaux began on the Louisbourg side. This road was not to be of less extent than twenty-eight French leagues.

On the 10th, having learned that the Sieur Des Assises, before his departure, had taken a large quantity of merchandize out of the store-houses, and had distributed them among the Saphirobai, with a view to excite them to rise against me, I sent Mr. Certain to them with a declaration, that the said Des Assises had stolen the effects out of his Majesty's stores, and that I should consider them as confederates in the theft, and act accordingly.

On the 13th, two Saphirobai chiefs arrived, and brought back great part of the merchandize which I had reclaimed; but they declared, that I ought not to attribute their proceeding to fear, but only to their open and honest character. The value of the effects distributed, with a view to destroy the settlement, amounted to more than twenty-three thousand livres; an exorbitant sum, considering that he had refused the sum of fifteen thousand livres for the necessary works, and constructing houses in the town.

On the 15th, a signal was displayed on the mountain Manghabey, on the isle d'Aiguillon, that two vessels of two masts were in sight. They anchored

chored in the harbour at eleven o'clock; the first was a brig of his Majesty's, commanded by the Sieur Joubert, Lieutenant of a frigate; and the second was the Coureur, which brought back the engineers I had sent to explore the Southern provinces, and survey the coast.

Captain Joubert, having presented his letter, signed by the Governor of the isle of France, and Mr. De Ternay the Intendant, I perceived that he had been sent merely as a spy upon my operations. For the Captain deposed, that his orders were to bring back to the isle of France, the remains of my troops; and that he had been dispatched upon the report that the natives had assassinated me, and cut off the greatest part of my people, the remainder having taken refuge at Manghabey. The Captain, finding that this story had been invented merely to gratify the chiefs of the isle of France, declared that he was ready to return according to his positive orders so to do, if he found me alive. This proceeding on the part of those whose duty it was to support me, put me out of all patience. I gave orders to the Captain to depart instantly, as his chiefs had sent him only to insult the establishment.

About two in the evening, a signal was made, that two other vessels were in sight; and at six his Majesty's frigate the Belle Poule, commanded by the Chevalier de Grenier, Lieutenant, anchored in the harbour. The Commander required provisions and stores for his vessel, which I caused to be delivered. This officer testified the most lively regret to find, that the chiefs of the isle of France were so strongly prejudiced against the settlement at Madagascar, and he took charge of my dispatches for the Court of France. I was employed till the 22d, in drawing out my accounts, of which the following is a general statement:

*Sums*

*Sums advanced for the Establishment at Madagascar,  
1772 and 1773.*

	<i>Livres.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
For levying the Regiment of Benyowsky, its transport to Madagascar, and the supplies of articles of trade 1774 and 1775, until the 20th of March } Bills of Exchange drawn to the amount of }	342649	12	5
	113000	10	3
Total received	<hr/> 455650	2	<hr/> 8

*Expenditures.*

For the troops during the years 1772, 1773, 1774, 1775 } For the Marine. To his Majes- ty's vessels the Postillion and Coureur }	141432	0	0
	396864	6	4
FOR THE SETTLEMENT.			
Building the Governor's house, roads, canals, fortifications, &c. }	315916	11	8
Supplies to the isle of France in slaves }	161412	0	0
Supplies to the isle of France in rice }	84000	0	0
Provisions to several of his Ma- jesty's vessels - - }	41423	11	7

Deduct the sums advanced

	<hr/> 1141048	12	7
	455650	2	8
	<hr/> 585398	9	11
And also the sums advanced by myself }	245000	0	0

* Neat profit produced by the	}	<i>Liures.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
Administration		340398	9	11

This clear account ought to have produced a good effect on the mind of the Minister. For as it was shewn that no more than the sum of liv. 455650 had been advanced, and that the single object of the maintenance of the troops and vessels at sea, amounted to liv. 538296, he might easily perceive the immense advantages that might in a short time be expected from Madagascar.

On the 23d, the Belle Poule set sail, and on the same day I received advice by a courier from Foul Point, that the Fariavas and Betalimenes, had declared war upon Hyavi, and that hostilities had already commenced. The commanding officer at Foul Point pressed me for orders, whether he should assist Hyavi or not. In consequence of this news, I determined to repair to Foul Point myself, in order to pacify the people.

On the 24th, after giving orders relative to the service at the chief establishment, I established a camp of eighty soldiers and two thousand natives, to secure the settlement against any surprize on the part of the Seclaves, and Saphirobai; and then departed for Foul Point, accompanied by two of-

\* This sum, which is the difference between the receipts and disbursements, is not neat profit. The result of the above account is, that the settlement cost the French, liv. 455650 2 8, and liv. 243000, which make together £700650 2 8. This is not equal to the whole charge, or £854212 18. But the settlement paid the difference, £153562 15 4, and also supplied the isle of France, and the King's ships, with £286835 11 7½. This last sum only is the return, and if taken from the whole sum advanced, will leave livres 413814 10, or the loss sustained by the French government, by the effect of this undertaking during the above time. Note of the editor.

ficers and six hundred warriors of the Sambarive nation. As I passed by Mananhar, I was joined by the troop of Sauce, and the people of Antimakol, and found myself at the head of near five thousand armed men.

On the 27th, my army was reinforced by the troop of Ambarante, and I arrived on the 1st of April at Foul Point.

I found the brig *Le Coureur* already here at anchor, with my artillery and ammunition. This day I established my camp near Tametavi, and in the evening I sent for Hyavi, to enquire of him respecting the cause of the war. As he could give me no good reason, I deferred explaining myself, until I had heard from the other party; to whose camp I sent that very night, to engage the chiefs to come and speak with me.

On the 2d, I received deputies from the Betalimenes, and Fariavas, who declared to me, that the two nations would abide by my decision, in the hopes that I would listen only to the dictates of that justice, which the spirit of God would inspire me with. They then declared, that Hyavi was the author of the war, by forbidding the Betalimenes and Fariavas to frequent the market at Foul Point; that he had confiscated the cattle, slaves, and provisions of the merchants of their nation, which they had brought for sale to the settlement; and, lastly, that the soldiers of Hyavi had surprized one of their villages, and taken away several young women, whom they had sold to the French merchants.

Being thus informed of the cause of the war, I dismissed the deputies with some presents, after I had promised to settle the whole dispute to their satisfaction, provided they allowed me the necessary time for that purpose. They engaged to do this, and returned to their camp very well satisfied, at

having found me disposed in their favour. For Hyavi had spread a report, that I was coming to assist him.

The next step I took was, to invite Hyavi to my quarters, when I reproached him for his conduct, and the licence he had given his subjects to disturb his neighbours. I spoke so urgently to him, that he confessed himself to blame; but at the same time begged I would act in such a manner, as not to degrade him in the eyes of his enemies. I engaged to regulate my proceedings according to his desire, on condition that he should submit to such terms as I should impose, both on him and the Betalimenes and Fariavas. After I had thus obtained the promise of both parties, I gave orders for holding the Cabar on the 3d, to which Hyavi and his chiefs, and also the Betalimenes and Fariavas were invited.

On the 2d, at day-break, I put my troops under arms, and ranged them in order of battle. About six, the Betalimenes and Fariavas arrived, to the number of eight or ten thousand armed men; and a short time after came Hyavi with his people; so that the number of men under arms, who were present that day, amounted to near twenty-two thousand. At eight the Cabar began, and as I was desirous of avoiding all particular debates, I proposed to both parties, to form that day a treaty of alliance and friendship, which I would guarantee, together with the nations of the Sambarives and Saphirobai; and farther I proposed, that they should enter into the following engagements:

1. That trade should in future be free between the three nations, without the reclamation of any particular right, (or impost).

2. That Hyavi should give up, or cause to be given up, the persons who had lately been surprized and carried off by his soldiers; and that for every one

one of them who could not be found, he should return two of his own subjects.

3. That the Betalimenes and Fariavas, should not in future, receive amongst them any fugitive subjects of Hyavi; and that they should compel all those, who during the last three months had taken refuge amongst them, to return two slaves each for his person.

4. That the Betalimenes, Fariavas, and the subjects of Hyavi, should furnish a sufficient number of workmen to open a road of communication for the general advantage of trade along the coast, from Foul Point to Bohitsmenes.

And in consideration that this last article was one of the most essential for their mutual interests, I declared my intention of appointing several of my officers to superintend the work.

After a continual debate of three hours, which every instant threatened to end in a general engagement, they at last became calm, and agreed to the first article; and with regard to the second and third, they concluded that all past inquiries should be buried in oblivion, without any reclamation being admitted on either side; and that in future, both nations should either give up the fugitives from the other, or at least drive them out of their dominions.

With respect to the fourth article, they agreed to send five thousand men to work on the road proposed to be made. These conditions thus settled, were ratified by an oath, in which the chiefs who came with me joined as witnesses and guarantees. Hyavi then caused fifty oxen to be killed, as did likewise the Betalimenes and Fariavas, and they were cut up and distributed among the troops.

On the 4th, the Betalimenes being desirous of testifying their gratitude, presented my troops with five hundred oxen. The Fariavas did the same,  
and

and Hyavi gave five hundred oxen and fifty slaves. The cattle were divided among the followers; but I gave the slaves their liberty, on condition that they should establish themselves near one of my settlements, and pay a tenth of the produce of their lands.

Having thus happily concluded upon a peace to the satisfaction of all parties, I determined to return to Louisbourg; and delayed my departure only till I had received the honours, which the belligerent parties were desirous of shewing me. At the conclusion of the festival, the Fariavas gave my troops forty slaves and two hundred oxen, and Hyavi on his part, gave two thousand piastres.

On the 11th, I arrived happily at Louisbourg, where I found affairs in a good train.

On the 12th, my chief interpreter having informed me of the approaching arrival of envoys from the King of Boyana, at the same time apprized me, that the chiefs of the Saphirobai and Antamboi, had sent deputies to the said envoys, to engage them in their interests against the settlement. I received a farther confirmation of this news from an old woman, a native of the country, who informed me besides, that the Saphirobai had gained the chief of the embassy of the Seclaves by presents; and that the latter had engaged, under the sanction of an oath, to seek means of breaking off the negociation; and to find sufficient reasons to engage his nation in their party. I was perfectly assured of the truth of this information, from other blacks attached to the settlement, who had been present at the taking of the oath.

Finding myself thus engaged in the most critical situation, I took the resolution of sending the brig La Flore, to the isle of France, to demand a supply of arms and ammunition; and by the same conveyances I sent back my family, with the greatest  
part

part of my household, in order to carry on my operations against the Seclaves with the greater activity. The vessel was dispatched without delay to the isle of France, with the Chevalier de Sanglier, Captain in my troop, in order to press the administration of that colony, to forward the necessary supplies with the utmost speed.

On the 21st, the chief Raoul came to me, to request a supply of men, because the Saphirobai chiefs, with the Seclaves, had determined to destroy him, on account of his refusal to enter into the combination against the settlement. The account I received from this chief, of the different preparations the confederates had made to attack the settlement, left me no doubt of the near approach of a war, which there was no means of avoiding. But as I did not expect succours in any short time, and all my force was reduced to the effects which might arise from firmness and courage, I thought it proper still to keep up my hopes.

On the 13th, I went in the night to the Plain of Health, that the enemy might not be informed of my absence; and immediately on my arrival, I put that post into a state of defence. It was guarded by twenty-nine soldiers, and five hundred natives, whom I could depend upon. The command was in the hands of M. de Mallendre, Captain, and M. de la Boullaye, Lieutenant. For a greater security, I caused palisades to be set on that side of the wood, through which the enemy might make an attack, by passing near the foot of the mountain, sheltered from the cannon of the fort. On the river side, I likewise cut down all the trees and underwood, that the artillery might command as far as Cape de Zasaiche. After having thus put this important fort in a state of defence, I embarked in my boats to return to Louisbourg. As I passed by the territory of Mahertombe, I discovered

discovered a camp of the enemy, who fired several shot at my boats; but the distance being too great for them to reach us, I arrived safely at Louisbourg, where I found every thing in good order.

On the 28th, I was informed of the arrival of envoys from the Sambarives of the East and West. They demanded a conference, to the exclusion of other nations; and at the same time assured me, that if I listened favourably to them, and granted them my friendship, they would soon deliver me from all my enemies. Such a proposal could not but be very agreeable to me. I therefore gave orders for making the due preparations for holding our meeting.

On the 20th, the Cabar or assembly was held, at which were present on the part of the settlement, the Count de Benyowsky, Commander; Messrs. Perthuis, De la Boullaye, and Rosier, Lieutenants; Unbanowsky, Engineer; Besse, Interpreter; and on the part of the Sambarives, the Prince Raffangour of that nation. The propositions of the Sambarives were delivered in the following speech.

“The nation of the Sambarives, the people of God, established in the provinces Mananhar and Massoualla, have seen with grief, that the settlement of Louisbourg has entered into treaties of friendship and alliance with other nations, in preference, and to the exclusion of theirs; and that at present, all those nations have united together against their benefactors, and have even invited our people to join with them against the white men. But as the Sambarives have always walked in the paths of justice, our nation has refused their offers, preferring the friendship of the chief of the white men, to every inducement of relationship or alliance, which might exist between ourselves  
and

and his enemies. In consequence of this disposition, the Sambarive nation offer to assist the settlement with five thousand men, to be employed against its enemies; and hope, by this action, that they shall be thought worthy of an alliance, the value of which they are well convinced of."

After having heard this harangue, I replied, that I had always been desirous of their alliance, but that the remoteness of their province had not hitherto permitted me to treat with them directly. I assured them, that the offer of supplies inspired me with an high opinion of their sentiments; and that I should accept this mark of friendship with the greatest pleasure, as it would justify the unbounded confidence I was determined to place in the Sambarive nation, respectable for the blood of Ramini.

The envoys then consulted together for a short time, and agreed to enter into the usual oath of allegiance. The rest of the day was employed in rejoicing; and in the evening my interpreter informed me, that the Sambarives had disappeared. This news gave me some concern; because as the oath of alliance had been taken, they ought to have apprized me of their departure.

June the 1st, 1775. At four in the morning, my interpreter announced the arrival of the Saphirobai chiefs, who had formed a league with the Seclaves; and likewise informed me, that they had about three thousand armed men with them, by means of whom he was assured they meditated a surprise. An hour afterwards, the chief Raoul came to demand an asylum for himself and family, at the same time that he acquainted me, that he had been plundered by the confederates, and had only time to save the lives of himself and family; that part of his people had been made prisoners by the enemy, and all his goods were destroyed by  
the

the flames. The unfortunate fate of this chief affected me much, and I begged him to retire with his family into the fort. This chief, in the infancy of the establishment, had been conquered and driven out of his province by my allies, because he opposed the building of a fortress; and in the present instance he suffered for his attachment to me.

At nine o'clock, the Seclaves and Saphirobai appeared at the distance of about a cannon shot. Their troops consisted of more than three thousand men. They sent deputies to request me to come to their camp to hear their complaints. This expression rather disconcerted me, as their complaints were backed by an armed force. But at last, not to give them reason to imagine that I was awed by their appearance, I put my troops in order to defend the fort, and went to the place of meeting. On my arrival, I ordered my interpreter to attend to their proposals and complaints. The confederates then demanded, that I should withdraw my troops from the interior parts of the island, especially from the post at the plain of Health; and that I should dispense them from the oath by which they had surrendered to me the banks of the river Tingballe, because they said they had been surprized by the promise I had made them of a secure trade, which should afford them the same advantages they had enjoyed with private traders, and of which they had been deprived since the arrival of the military. They concluded their harangue by observing, that their interests did not admit of the troops being allowed a settlement; and they added that private traders, upon coming amongst them, had always paid a duty, of which they had been deprived since the establishment of the settlement; and more particularly they declared, that formerly every merchant, and even King's vessel, on its arrival, saluted the chiefs with

with two guns, a respectful custom which I had maliciously abolished.

After having calmly listened to their speech, and finding myself in a very critical situation, I replied, that they would do well to consider what they were about; that as they had surrendered to us the lands we were in possession of, they could not reclaim them without violating their oath. Besides which, having entered into an alliance with the settlement, every violent proceeding on their part would authorize me to employ my troops in punishing them; so that I could not make them any satisfaction without positive orders. That the demolition of the fort, and withdrawing of the troops from the internal parts of the island, were things impossible to be agreed to; that with regard to the honours, I would give orders to the officers of the shipping to do as they had formerly done; but that with regard to their pretended right to a duty on ships, which entered their ports, it was ridiculous, because it had never been heard that friends and allies received those who came only to trade, from any other motives than to serve themselves.

My speech astonished the people; but some of the chiefs cried out, let us come to business, and took notice that they could not have a better opportunity, as they had one in their hands, and could oblige me to do that by force which I refused to do from good will. In the mean time, I found myself surrounded on all sides, and should certainly have passed a quarter of an hour very disagreeably, if the Commander\* at the head of fifty blacks, had not hastened to my assistance. His spirited attack obliged a party of the enemy to oppose him, while another detachment having attack-

\* Name not legible.

ed the fort, and suffered a vigorous repulse, threw their troops into confusion. This gave me an opportunity of making my escape. I saw only two chiefs who opposed my passage. I parried their strokes, upon which they cried out, he is a force-rer, we are undone. Taking advantage of their stupidity, I rallied the troop of my Commander, among whom I found several of my officers and soldiers, who seeing me surrounded, had sacrificed themselves to assist me. The Commandant of the fort likewise, seeing me clear of the enemy, pointed the cannon, and prepared to fire, which he had forborn to do before, lest I should become the victim of his fire. The enemy soon perceived my escape; and for fear of the artillery, hastily retired towards the wood, firing a few shot as they retreated.

On my arrival at the fort, I saw my troops again with much satisfaction, as I could not give too much praise to them for their attention to orders. It may here be objected that I did not act prudently, in putting myself in this manner in the hands of the enemy, as it was in my power to have prevented their approach, by making use of my cannon. In answer to which, I must observe in my justification,

1. That in order to be at liberty to act against a nation, which it is intended to civilize, it is necessary to be in possession of facts that prove them the aggressors.

2. A chief cannot dispense with attending to complaints. If I had refused to comply with a request which carried so much the appearance of justice, the party of the complaining nation might have found means of inspiring others with ambiguous sentiments, and my conduct would have afforded them authority for so doing.

3. If

3. If unfortunately in a Cabar or assembly, I had made use of cannon, which would have produced a massacre, the other neighbouring nations, being ill informed of the circumstances, would always have suspected that I had premeditated the stroke; and that the assembly had been convened for no other purpose than to exterminate them. An event of this nature, however founded in justice, would have been sufficient to have alienated the minds of every one for a short time; but by avoiding it, my conduct was productive of real advantage. The neighbouring people, informed of the conduct of the Saphirobai and Seclaves, and of the moderation with which I had repelled them, could not delay to join our cause. The war we were about to enter into, would be justified before it could be criticised. For this reason likewise it was, that I determined to make offers of peace to our enemies, which they refused, and by that means cleared us of all reproach.

On the 3d, the interpreters, whom I had sent to the Saphirobai, with offers of peace, returned with the information, that the confederates had haughtily refused every proposal of accommodation, and had sent a party of a thousand men to take the post at the plain of Health. The next day I received news, that the enemy had been repulsed at fort Augustus, and at the plain.

On the 5th, the chief Sancé arrived with one thousand men, to assist the settlement against the confederates. This chief was descended from a pirate named Zan. In the night of the same day, I was apprized of the arrival of thirty boats of the country, bringing six hundred armed warriors from the province of Rantabe.

On the 6th, a detachment I had sent to reconnoitre the enemy returned, and informed me, that the Antambour nation, allied to the Saphirobai,

bai, had established a camp in the plain, and waited only for the junction of the Saphirobai and Seclaves to attack the post. And that on the other hand the Saphirobai and the Seclaves had formed three camps, between the post at the plain and the chief settlement, to cut off the communication. The same day I was informed of the arrival of fifteen thousand armed men, of the Sambarive nation, who came to assist the establishment, and requested to be sent against the enemy without delay.

On the 10th, the Sambarives being all joined by the Mulatto chiefs, composed a body of upwards of six thousand men, with which I took the field. The campaign promised to be laborious, on account of the necessity of climbing rocks and mountains, and passing over marshy lands, which threatened to deprive me of the advantage of my cannon.

Having at last approached the enemy's camp, who were established in the plain of Mahertomp, I sent Messrs. L' Armina and certain officers of my corps, with fifty volunteers, and two thousand blacks, with orders to attack the enemy's post at sun-set. Soon afterwards we heard several repeated discharges, which obliged me to march to support my detachment, who had not been able to dislodge the enemy from the advantageous situation they were encamped in. But the firing ceasing all at once, I supposed the parties had separated. To arrive at a certainty, I sent two volunteers, who reported, that they had observed two camps at a little distance from each other, and that each were busied in forming entrenchments. After this information, I sent Lieutenant la Tour, of my corps to make a circuit to the other side of the enemy's camp, where he was ordered to remain concealed till midnight; after which time he was  
to

to rush impetuously upon them, and at the instant of our attack to fire on them from the other side. My officer performed his orders with great exactness; and I heard several reports of pateraroes at two in the morning, at which instant, as I was ready to march, I proceeded strait to the enemy; but instead of enemies, I met the Sambarives on the road, who, having heard the reports of the large pieces, supposed that I had attacked the enemy. Being thus united by accident to the whole of my forces, I entered the plain of Mahertomp, where we found no enemies, but in their place, my officer, with his detachment. He informed me, that, pursuant to my orders, he had briskly attacked the enemy's camp, who, upon hearing the repeated discharge of cannon, imagined the attack to be supported by our whole army, and had made their escape, some by swimming, and the rest into the woods. My detachment collected upwards of two hundred muskets, which the fugitives had left in their haste. Forty prisoners were taken by my people.

Having in this manner become master of the plain of Mahertomp, which is really the most agreeable spot, and the richest part of the whole province of Antimaroa, occupying a space of six leagues along the banks of the river of Tingballe, and more than thirteen in depth, perfectly well cultivated and inhabited throughout, I judged it proper to establish a post to preserve it, and to secure a communication between it, and the chief settlement, and the plain of Health. As I had six thousand blacks under my command, I set them to work without delay on this project; and while I thus employed my people, I determined to send back the prisoners with proposals of peace, to convince them of our good intentions. But these in-  
fatuated

fatuated people still refused to accede to my proposition.

On the 12th, the redoubt was finished at the plain of Mahertomp, in which I left twelve volunteers commanded by an officer, and defended by four cannon, which I had caused to be brought from Louisbourg. I then proceeded with my whole army to the plain of Health, where on my arrival I learned that the enemy, to the number of seven or eight thousand, was encamped at no more than two leagues distance from us; and that their camp was well entrenched and palisaded. This stopped my progress, until I could receive four field pieces from Louisbourg. But the chiefs of my allies being desirous of proving their valour, without waiting the arrival of the artillery, went and attacked the enemy unknown to me. They made several fruitless assaults, and being at last repelled, they retired as far as to the foot of the mountain, with the enemy close at their backs.

My four pieces of cannon being at last arrived, I marched myself, with thirty volunteers and two hundred disciplined natives, in the pay of the settlement. We departed in the night unknown to our allies, and at day-break, after having erected two batteries, I began a very hot fire on the enemy. In the space of half an hour, one side of their palisade being entirely destroyed, they abandoned their first entrenchment, and filed off behind a kind of redoubt, from which they were likewise dislodged. At last they hastened, in the utmost confusion, to a branch of the river of Ranoumena, which was out of the reach of my cannon. But my allies, being informed that I was engaged with the enemy, ran up, and seeing the camp taken, quickly passed the river, attacked and drove them without resistance. This whole business was performed with only two volunteers wounded, who were my

my cook and servant. The loss of the Sambarives consisted of eleven men, and of the enemy about sixty-five. The Sambarives pursued them for some days, as far as their frontier; but I remained at the plain of Health.

On the 21st, after having refreshed my people, I raised my camp at the plain, in order to be nearer the second division of the enemy, who had retired into the morafs of Ampangou, upon an island of about six leagues in circumference, and surrounded with water.

On the 22d, I arrived at the plain of Mahertomp, where I pitched my camp at the foot of the new redoubt. Five days were employed in discovering the passage through the morafs, and in reconnoitring the position of the enemy.

On the 27th, I raised my camp at the plain of Mahertomp, and after having passed the river of Tingballe, I arrived at the entrance of the morafs, from whence we distinctly saw the enemy's camp, at the distance of about a league and half, and consisting of four thousand men.

On the 28th, we received a check at the entrance of the river Ranoufoutchy, which the enemy were obstinately determined to defend. The Seclaves lost so many men, that they quitted their allies, whose forces were considerably weakened by this event.

On the 29th, several skirmishes took place between our people and the enemy. This night four volunteers, who had been sent to collect wood for the use of the camp, passed the morafs, and thought proper to amuse themselves by attacking the enemy, to whose tents they set fire.

July the 1st, 1775. Continual rains increased the waters of Ampangou to such an height, that our camp was overflowed, and we were obliged to retreat above a league. Our enemies, attributing

our retreat to another cause, took courage and attempted to harrass us.

From the 2d to the 8th it rained continually, which gave the enemy time to surround their camp with a ditch and palifade.

On the 9th, I received advice, that a party of about three thousand of the enemy had rallied since the defeat of the Antambours, and had joined the opposite camp; and that another party were very troublesome in the neighbourhood of Louisbourg. On this day I heard of the arrival of a vessel.

On the 10th, the officer commanding the redoubt at the plain of Mahertomp, which I had named Fort St. John, wrote to me, that reports were current to the effect, that the enemy was desirous of forming a treaty of peace with me, to the prejudice of the Sambarives and other nations in alliance, who already began to murmur, more especially as I did not attack the enemy, though they did not consider the obstacles occasioned by the overflowing of the waters.

On the 13th, the enemy being in want of provisions in the camp, out of which they dared not fall for fear of my party, began to repent of their warfare. In consequence of this information, I sent several boats loaded with rice and bananas, with some brandy; and let them understand, that I was so far from being desirous of exterminating them, that I would leave them a clear passage to retreat, whenever they thought proper, on condition of their laying down their arms. Accordingly, I withdrew two posts which guarded the passage from the island to the firm land. This step was attended with much success; for the enemy perceiving themselves every day more distressed by famine, began to retire in troops, and several came to me. These I received kindly; and after giving them some provisions, I suffered them to go where they pleased.

On

On the 14th, I received information from Louifbourg of the arrival of the private ship the Conquerant, commanded by the Sieur Olivier, from the isle of France, which brought dispatches from the government of that colony: wherein I was informed, that the Chevalier de Sanglier, Captain of my corps, whom I had sent to demand supplies, had received an absolute refusal. This disagreeable news gave me the greatest concern; but as it was a step of prudence to encourage my people, I gave out, that this ship would be followed by two of his Majesty's packets, with a supply of one hundred men; and I succeeded in destroying, in some measure, the consternation of my officers.

From the 15th to the 19th, I was informed that the enemy had entered into a treacherous correspondence with part of our allies. I therefore set my confidential spies at work to make discoveries.

On the 20th in the morning, a detachment, which had been sent out of the camp to observe the enemy, discovered two blacks making their escape; the elder of whom said to the other, "Run and tell them, that no dependance can be placed on those whom they supposed to be their friends, and that I am taken." This black being brought before me, confessed that he had been sent to seduce part of our allies; but that not having succeeded, they had been desirous of informing their countrymen, that we intended to attack them. Upon this deposition, I immediately caused a meeting of several chiefs to be held, who condemned him to death. I consented to the decree with greater willingness, because the man was found to be the same, who in the infancy of the settlement had engaged to set fort Louis on fire. His sentence was immediately carried into execution.

On the 24th, the commanding officer of fort St. John reported, that a soldier of the name of La

Gonivier, lately arrived from the isle of France, had made several mutinous proposals, by assuring the troops that they were abandoned, and that the isle of France was so far from sending any supplies, that on the contrary, its chiefs sought every occasion to destroy us. Being desirous of verifying the fact myself, I gave directions to take no notice; and with a view to watch the man more narrowly, I ordered him into my own camp. In the night, between eleven and twelve o'clock, hearing a noise, I came out of my tent, and saw the soldier, La Gonivier, make several strokes with a sabre at the officer of the guard, at the same time that I distinctly heard him say, "That the time would soon come, when the soldiers should command the officers at Madagascar." I therefore called the guard, which ran and endeavoured to take the mutineer. The man in despair rushed on them, and wounded two, crying out, "Come on, my friends." This call at first led me to suspect a plot. I observed, however, from all the motions of the volunteers, that they remained composed and steady in their duty, by closing upon the mutineer, who fled towards the wood, but was brought down by a ball. This unexpected event, which tended to disconcert our black allies, induced me to hasten his execution. I therefore called a council of my officers without delay, but the criminal expired of his wound before his trial came on.

On the 28th, the enemy remaining still in a small number on their posts, which they were obstinately determined not to quit, being encouraged by the promise of thirty thousand men on the part of the Seclaves, I determined to attack them. But as I had no intention of causing a massacre, I advised them of our approach by several discharges of cannon.

On

On the 26th, 27th, and 28th, our black allies pursued the enemy ; who retired to the Northern parts of the island, as far as the frontiers of Antimananhar.

August the 1st. The Sieur Bourdé, to whom the Minister had granted the whale fishery on the coast of Madagascar, not having succeeded in his enterprize, requested my permission to purchase rice, in order to indemnify him for his want of success. I willingly agreed to his request, as the establishment being destitute of merchandize, could not carry on any commerce itself. I granted the same permission to the Sieur Olivier, who brought a vessel from the isle of France.

August the 3d, being delivered from our enemies, and the province of Antimaroa being without cultivation, I proposed to the Sambarives, to replace the Saphirobai, who had been driven out of their province. My proposition was joyfully accepted, and they immediately agreed to pay me an annual acknowledgment for the protection of the establishment.

On the 4th, a general meeting being held for the division of the conquered lands of the enemy, I gave the right branch of the river of Tingballe to the Sambarives, and kept the left branch for the establishment. Several parties of the Saphirobai detesting the offences they had committed against the establishment, now came to request forgiveness. The kind and affable manner in which I received them, soon caused them to forget their losses, and to condemn their chiefs, who had sacrificed their people to their own private interests. From these fugitives I likewise learned, that the Saphirobai were forced to wander in the woods, and subsist upon roots, because the chiefs of the other provinces refused them an asylum. I determined, therefore, to take advantage of this circumstance,

cumstance, to shew the uprightness of my intentions; and for this purpose, on the following day, I sent commissioners to the neighbouring chiefs, to desire them to assist the Saphirobai with the necessaries of life, and to receive them freely, provided they renounced their purpose of continuing the war. This step could not but be productive of manifest advantage.

On the 5th, another embarrassment presented itself. The subsistence of the troops of our allies became chargeable to the establishment, and I determined to dismiss them. But this, according to the custom of the island, could not be done without recompensing them by presents.

The 7th, and 8th, were employed in the distribution of presents; and I had the satisfaction to see the different nations with their chiefs, return contented with my manner of proceeding.

On the 9th, I was attacked by a fever.

On the 10th, being no longer employed by the war, I directed my attention entirely to procure the comforts of life for the establishment, on a good footing. Being convinced of the inconveniences to which my people were exposed, in houses constructed with leaves, after the manner of the country, I determined to construct the whole of wood. My troops, with two thousand hired blacks, should have been employed in building new apartments for the Governor, with an hospital, barracks, and store-houses, and two hundred other blacks in building sixty houses, to form the town; and during the building, the troop of Sance, composed of twelve hundred men, should have laboured in filling the morafs. But it was unfortunate, that I was then without the means, otherwise Louisbourg would soon have changed its appearance.

On the 16th, my disorder increased, and I felt an universal weakness, which obliged me to place  
the

the command in the hands of Captain Mallendre, reserving to myself, however, the communication of all affairs of importance. My illness, however, became continually worse, so that I was not consulted on any business whatever.

On the 20th, I was somewhat better, and received information of the death of the Sieur Garreau.

On the 1st of September, this brave and intelligent officer was carried to the tomb, to the regret of the whole corps. The place of engineer which he possessed, being rendered vacant by his death, I gave orders to the Sieur Rosier, the scholar of the Sieur Garreau, to perform that office.

On the 21st, the officers of my corps waited upon me, and requested, that I would give them orders relative to the intention of the Court, with respect to the establishment at Madagascar; that in case my illness should prevent my being in a situation to attend to the colony, they might act conformably to the good of the service; but finding myself weaker that day than ordinary, I requested them to meet at my house on the 22d.

On the 22d, the fever left me, and I found myself somewhat stronger. This day the meeting was held, for the result of which, see the piece, L. X. at the end of this memoir, by which the council was adjourned to the 25th.

On the 25th, the council met by adjournment, and I received information, that eight wooden houses were finished, in which the troops were lodged.

October the 1st. The Sieur Olivier, master of a private vessel from the isle of France, by whose means the subsistence of the establishment had been provided for, set sail with a cargo of six hundred and fifty thousand pounds of rice; the Sieur Bourdé likewise took in a cargo of eight hundred  
and

and fifty thousand pounds of rice. This supply of provisions must have been very acceptable; and if the isle of France had supplied our store-houses with merchandize, a prodigious quantity might have been had, which the islanders wasted for want of sale; and there is reason to apprehend, that this want will diminish their industry next season.

On the 2d, the Sambarive chiefs requested permission to erect flag staves on their territory, to distinguish the chiefs from each other. I agreed to their request, and at the same time distributed to each chief a white flag, with different stripes of red and blue, to distinguish their degrees. The same day the Saphirobai chiefs, who had always remained attached to the government, requested permission to build a town, under the protection of fort Louis, in order to defend them from the incursions of their adversaries. I agreed to their request with pleasure, as it afforded a means of attaining my purpose, which was to people the province as much as possible, on account of its vicinity to the chief settlement, where the consumption must naturally be more considerable, than in any other part of the island.

On the 3d, I began to perceive a return of my strength, and I found the hospital entirely empty; a circumstance which shews, that my troops at this time were stronger than ever. I do not, however, here speak of that vigour which is natural to Europeans in their own country, but which they lose in hot climates.

On the 4th, Hiavi, chief of the province of Mahavelou, demanded my assistance against the Fariavas and Betalimenes, who had declared war against him. As this chief had always acted in the interests of the Europeans, I determined to assist him; and for that purpose, detached seven volunteers with

with a subaltern officer, to Foul Point, to act according to the orders of the commander at that out-settlement. I was convinced before hand, that the mere report of my having taken part with Hiavi, would put an end to the war.

On the 6th, the hospital, with all the adjoining buildings, were at last finished in a solid manner; but, fortunately, we were at this time in a situation to keep them vacant.

From the 7th to the 12th, I made an excursion, to visit the district which had been surrendered to the Sambarives, on the banks of the river Tingballe. The lands were excellent, but the territory annexed to the establishment by the late conquest, were greatly superior. What immense riches might be derived from a district of land, twenty-two leagues in length, upon the coast of a navigable river? This excursion entirely restored my health.

On the 13th, I gave orders to cover the post of fort St. John, by a broad ditch and a double palisade, with a covered way, and to build several houses in wood, for the accommodation of such as might stop there, in their way to the plain of Health.

On the 14th, I received a courier from the Sieur Mayeur, interpreter, and Mr. Corbi, officer of my corps, the latter of whom I had sent in boats round the Northern parts of the island, while the former went by land along the shore, in order to examine all the bays, harbours, and rivers, the inhabitants, their numbers, forces, industry, productions, and mutual interests. I ordered them to continue their journey, until they arrived at the territories of Lambouin, a chief who assumed the title of King of the North. My intention was to engage this chief in our interests, and to purchase of him the island Nossebe, situated to the N. W. of the island of Madagascar, in  $13^{\circ} 15' S.$  latitude,

latitude, and  $45^{\circ} 6'$  longitude from Paris. These two officers sent me the journals of the coast. They informed me, that they had joined company in the territories of the chief Lambouin, by whom they were amicably received; that this chief being astonished at the renown of the white men, had determined before their arrival, to send ambassadors to me, to form a treaty with the establishment, and that profiting by his good disposition, they had caused him to enter into an oath of friendship; that they had purchased the island Nofsebe of him; and that having in this manner attained the purposes of their mission, they waited only for my orders to return.

Being thus assured of the attachment of Lambouin, whose interest it was to secure himself against the vexations of the Seclaves, I could depend on a respectable ally, capable of furnishing fifteen or twenty thousand men.

From the 15th to the 20th, being in perfect tranquillity, and my troops being recovered from their fatigue, I recommenced the works, and employed them in building a place of residence for the Governor.

On the 21st, I received information that several bands of the Saphirobai fugitives had approached the establishment, where they had burned several houses of the Sambarives; upon which I immediately detached twelve volunteers, commanded by an officer, and supported by six hundred blacks, to clear the woods and their avenues.

On the 22d, my detachment returned in the evening with three prisoners, whom they had taken, after surprizing a party of these black robbers.

On the 23d, I received a packet from my officer, who commanded at Foul Point, in which he informed me, that the enemies of Hiavi had made offers

offers of peace, on condition that the commander of that post should be appointed judge, to determine the differences which might arise between them and Hiavi; but that the latter, not having thought proper to consent, my officer engaged to bring Hiavi to reason, provided he might have permission to use threats, in case he obstinately continued to refuse his compliance. As this manœuvre promised to gain an entire people to my interests, and I was well aware of the prudence of my officer, I returned precise orders to him in consequence.

October the 24th. The end of the month now approaching, without the arrival of any news from Europe, and the return of the Chevalier de Sanguier, whom I had sent for supplies to the isle of France, being likewise retarded, produced the most afflicting reflections in my mind; and I had no other resource than my firmness against the unhappy fate which pursued me. I considered the approach of the bad season, during which, if the supplies should continue to be withheld (as it would be out of my power to form establishments in the interior parts of the country), I had every reason to expect that the settlement would be again plunged into the most critical situation. The troops seeing none of the supplies arrive, upon which their hopes had been hitherto supported, must of course consider themselves as abandoned; and that with so much the more certainty, as the reports spread in the isle of France, concerning the reduction of my troops had been divulged at Madagascar, notwithstanding all my precautions. The courage of my officers, who had adopted the firm resolution of doing their duty, by encouraging their men, was the only circumstance which supported me, and gave me reason to presume that I might still resist the pressure of misfortune. But who could answer for the continuance of my force, which

which must every day become less effectual? What an unhappy situation it is for a Commander in Chief, who, after resisting the intemperature of hot climates, suffered dangerous diseases, and undergone infinite fatigue;—who, after having seen his troops diminished one-third, finds himself under the necessity of facing every circumstance, without losing the advantages he has gained, but on the contrary, preserving them against sudden revolutions; and who, instead of the supplies he has requested, is exposed to the jealousy and calumnies of persons in place who were ordered by the Government to afford him every assistance!— A promise was made me, that I should receive every year supplies, and a reinforcement of one hundred and twenty men; and that in the mean time the isle of France should support me in every pressing exigency; and in a word, that nothing should be wanting for the success of my mission. But, alas, two whole years were gone, and I still remained without supplies. If they were still delayed, I saw that the fatal instant would not fail to arrive, in which the fruits of all my labour, care, and fatigue would vanish, and France be for ever deprived of the power of regaining the confidence of the natives. Such were the reflections that oppressed me, and on an occasion like this, the pen can never describe the sufferings of the mind.

From the 25th, to the end of the month, I employed my time in visiting the posts, which I found every where in perfect order. But I found sadness and depression in every countenance; a sadness which certainly did not arise from a spirit of mutiny. I knew my troops too well to suspect it. But I could be at no loss for the cause. Destitute of linen, of clothes, or covering, I beheld them disheartened, and had not external resource to relieve them, and restore their spirits.

November

November the 1st, 1775. Activity and resolution were never more necessary. I collected a number of the native women, whom I employed in making cloth, and ten volunteers were selected to perform the occupation of taylor, in clothing my poor fellows. I succeeded in tanning skins, and being provided with shoemakers, the prospect of again possessing shoes, began to be more cheering than before. Nothing therefore remained, but to divert my men. For this purpose I exercised them in firing at a mark, and gave a prize to such as distinguished themselves. This exercise tended to render them more serviceable, and was at the same time an object of entertainment. In consequence of this determination, I put a stop to the ordinary works, and began the exercises.

On the 4th, I was informed of the arrival of the Saphirobai chief Effenlahé, who was sent by his nation to demand an audience. I referred him to the next day, in order to give time to the Sambarive chiefs to come together, and be present at the delivery of the propositions of this envoy.

On the 5th, the assembly being met, the envoy of the Saphirobai entered. His head was shaven, as a mark of submission, and prostrating himself on the ground, he pronounced these words. "I, the unfortunate chief of the race of the Saphirobai Antimaroa, throw myself at the feet of the justice and mercy of the great Chief, to implore his grace, in the name of my whole nation, which requests permission to send deputies to expiate its fault. I am come before to offer my life if it be necessary. Conqueror, in us thou mayest no longer behold an enemy, but the remains of an unhappy people, who are obedient and submissive to thy laws."

After having listened to his speech, I replied as follows: "I have beheld with sorrow the irregularities of the Saphirobai chiefs. I call your own  
nation

nation to witness, with what tenderness I have conducted myself, with a view to maintain an alliance and avoid a war, whose consequences could not fail to end in your destruction. And thou, chief Effonlahé, who now speakest with me, say, wast thou not three times charged to carry offers of peace to thy countrymen? Am I to blame that my offers produced three refusals? Judge then this day, who has acted wrong; and who it is that has deserved the chastisement of heaven. The oaths of fidelity, by which we were united before this unhappy war, have been sported with by you. You have broken your engagements with us. You have dared to infringe a compact made in the presence of the great God. It is he who has punished you, and pursues you with his vengeance.— But I am charged never to refuse the offers of friendship made by the people of Madagascar. It is my duty to protect the unfortunate, and to render justice where it is due, at the price of my blood, and that of my companions. It is by virtue of these orders that I grant forgiveness to the nation of the Saphirobai. They may without fear send any of their chiefs to me during the course of the ensuing month, to regulate the common interests of both nations.”

The envoy of the Saphirobai, contented with my answer, repeated his prayers, thanked me, and retired.

The Sambarive chiefs, who were present at the assembly, informed me of their apprehensions, that as I had pardoned the Saphirobai, I should restore them their entire province, and consequently, that they should be forced to abandon their establishment. But when they had received an assurance from me, that that part of the province which had been granted to them, should remain in their possession,

possession, by virtue of the treaty concluded with the Saphirobai, they became contented.

From the 6th of November, to the 13th, I was constantly employed in exercising my troops; and their cloathing being at last ready, was distributed among them.

On the 14th, a courier from Foul Point, accompanied with two chiefs, subject to Hiavi, arrived. My officers informed me, that Hiavi had at last consented to my request, and that peace was concluded on; but that, on the other hand, the chiefs who were subject to Hiavi, were meditating a revolt against him, as they could no longer bear his oppression. The two chiefs who arrived with my courier, gave me an account of this, and assured me, that the people who were subject to Hiavi, were perfectly willing to submit to the settlement, provided I would declare against their Sovereign. I might perhaps have listened to this proposition at another time; but in the situation I then stood, it would not have been prudent to have engaged myself in an affair of such a nature, as might have produced very serious consequences. I therefore contented myself with promising to these two chiefs that I would bring Hiavi to reason, and in the mean time I forbade them to make any attempt against him, until I had ascertained the facts myself. My promise was accompanied by presents, with which they were well satisfied.

The interests of the settlement required, that the power of Hiavi should be limited, but a sudden revolution might probably endanger the government; and it is not till after a course of time, that the authority of certain chiefs can be diminished. In the mean time, it is necessary to treat them with mildness, and to explain to them their true interests. For it is certain, that the Madagascar nations can never be subjugated by force, and  
2 the

the work of civilization cannot be accomplished, but by a man who by his conduct, virtue, and justice, shall have acquired the confidence of the chiefs and people.

The 15th and 16th, were employed in repairing all the shallops, boats, and canoes, and putting them in a state for service.

On the 17th, the Sieur Aumont, storekeeper, died. I immediately gave orders to the clerk to seal all his effects and papers, to forward them to Mr. Maillart; and on the other hand, that the service might not suffer, I gave orders to make an inventory of the contents of the store-houses, which I entrusted provisionally to the Sieur Bessé, treasurer, conformably to the intention of the Minister, who, in his letter took notice, that the treasury and stores might be intrusted to one person. This business was quickly performed, but I was greatly astonished to hear from the Secretary of the administration, that all the registers of entry and disbursements were blank. This admirable method of keeping accounts, must no doubt have been productive of no very agreeable consequences to Mr. Maillart, who chose these people.

On the 18th, I received advice from the blacks, that an English ship which had sailed along the coast during the course of the month, had suffered so much by a tempest, that they were forced to fire several guns for assistance, in the sight of the settlement of Angontzi; but that the hard weather having driven her off the coast, they had lost sight of her; and she had been since seen from Andrava, at the distance of two leagues from the shore, on fire. No more than seven people were saved in the boat, which came on shore at Loquez. The following day I sent an order to the Sieur Mayeur, interpreter, (who was not more than two days journey distance from the place where  
these

these unfortunate people had landed) to give them assistance, and afford them the means of coming to the chief settlement.

On the 19th, several blacks from the Western coast informed me, that the chiefs of the Seclaves had held a meeting, in which they had determined to make war upon the French, and to engage all the people of the East in their interests; in consequence of which, they had sent several chiefs into the different provinces, to persuade them to unite against the establishment. These reports demanded all my attention. I likewise sent spies on my part to inquire into the truth, in order that I might have time to make preparations, in case the Seclaves should succeed, in forming their league with the people of the East coast; and they were particularly directed to ascertain, whether they proposed to fall upon us in the bad season, which would have greatly embarrassed me.

On the 20th, I sent my spies with articles of trade to purchase cattle. Under this pretence, they were to obtain information of manoeuvres of the Seclaves, and the intentions of the different nations.

On the 21st, the Sambarive chiefs assembled at the settlement in great consternation, at the news of the war, which the Seclaves had declared against the establishment. They demanded why the succours from France were so long delayed; and how I should act, in case I should be attacked by the Seclaves in the bad season, before their arrival. They observed, likewise, that with my small number of people, I could not make any resistance against the enemy; and that they themselves should become their victims, as being the most faithful and zealous friends of the establishment. To encourage them, and remove their apprehensions, I replied, that I was ashamed of the fear,

which so brave a nation as themselves had shewn on this occasion ; that the Sambarives ought to have a better opinion of my courage ; and that I knew well what would be the properest mode of proceeding. My answer, however, did not satisfy them. They repeated their complaints, and said, “ You will abandon us. Your King has not sent any more people to you. You are ready to quit us, and we alone shall be unfortunate, for having been your friends.” The voice of the people and of the chiefs was the same. They requested me to take an oath that I would not abandon them. I gave several entertainments to the chiefs and people of the Sambarives, and neglected nothing to inspire them with all the necessary confidence. But in my own mind, I had as much need of consolation ; for I found myself at the approach of the bad season, without supplies, without troops, and in a word, entirely abandoned.

On the 14th of December, a periagua arrived from the North, which brought me a Malay woman, who alone had survived the wreck of the English vessel. She informed me, that the English vessel had left Bombay with sixteen guns and one hundred men, and that her cargo was composed of silk and other merchandize of India, with fire-arms and brandy ; that after their departure from Bombay, they had put in at the island of Johanna ; and, lastly, that on their arrival on the coast of Madagascar, they had tried to take some of the natives, to speak with them, but had not succeeded, notwithstanding the repeated trips their boats had made on shore ; at the approach of which, the natives of the country were always seen either armed to prevent their landing, or flying into the interior parts of the country ; that, lastly, the vessel being overtaken by a tempest, was obliged to stand off the coast, and upon her having caught  
fire,

fire, the whole crew took the boats to make for the shore; that out of three boats two were sunk by the number of people who crowded into them, and the jolly-boat only reached the shore with seven persons, including the Captain; that the Captain with six others were dead, and she alone remained out of the ship.

On the 15th, my spies having returned, confirmed the report, that great preparations for war were making by the Seclaves against us, and that they waited only for the breaking up of the bad season, to take the field to the number of thirty thousand men; that they had sent several emissaries into the different provinces to engage the chiefs on their side, but that they depended much more on their own forces, flattering themselves that the French durst not face them, and that during the time they should keep them shut up in their forts, they should be at liberty to reduce the provinces of their allies, who would be forced to follow their standards. This information, though very disagreeable, on account of the disposition and situation of the establishment, gave me some consolation; because I was assured, that the Seclaves would leave me in tranquillity during the whole of the bad season, and that the supplies so long expected, would at length arrive.

On the 16th, I sent several messengers both to the North and South of the island, to inform the chiefs of the movements of the Seclaves; at the same time enjoining them, to hold themselves in readiness to join my forces at the first orders I should give. I signified to them besides, that all those who should receive the Seclaves among them, under any pretext whatever, would be considered as enemies of the establishment.

On the 18th, I received informaton of the arrival of the chiefs of the Saphirobai and Antambour, who requested a meeting, and demanded peace.

On the 21st, the Saphirobai and Antambour chiefs were admitted into the Cabar. They represented to me, that the misfortunes and power of war, having dispossessed them of their province, and being reduced to the vile and abject condition of vagabonds, who have no country, they had unanimously determined to surrender themselves to my discretion; that they requested only a part of their province for cultivation, without pretending to the propriety, the right of which belonged to the Sambarives. They concluded by observing, that if they were to be unhappy, they intreated at least, that they might be permitted to die in their own country. Being informed from my interpreters, of the sincerity of their repentance, and the interests of the establishment requiring, that the province should be as fully peopled as possible, I pardoned them, and the chiefs entered into an oath of submission and fidelity.

On the 24th, a signal was made on the mountain, that a two masted vessel was in sight.

On the 26th, the vessel anchored near the isle Aiguillon, about noon, and the Chevalier de Sanglier, Captain, whom I had sent to the isle of France, being come on shore, presented to me four recruits he had raised, which composed the succour the isle of France sent me. I employed the whole day in reading my packets, in hopes of finding some order or letter from the Minister; but I found nothing but the railleries which the letters of Messrs. de Ternay and Maillart were filled with. Mr. de Sanglier informed me, that several suits at law were carrying on against me in the isle of France; and, lastly that every outrage, calumny, and imposture, was used to overwhelm me. I here pass them over in silence, as they form no part of my operations.

On

On the 27th, the four persons whom Mr. de Ternay forwarded to me to be employed as volunteers of honour, were presented to me. This commander pretended to serve the state, by sending men to me whose past conduct had consisted of highly reprehensible irregularities, and unnatural crimes. I do not here mention their names on account of their families; but I do not think they escaped at Madagascar. This island is a true touchstone for the conduct of men. I received information of the death of his Majesty, Louis XV. of happy memory, and the joyful accession of his Majesty Louis XVI. to the throne. I likewise understood that the Ministry was changed; and I was apprehensive that for this reason my supplies would be retarded, and the plan of my operations might probably be changed. In a word, all these circumstances opposed my progress. I had no other dependance than patience and firmness, and the hope that the veil which covered the future, would at last fall.

January the 1st, 1776. I was busied in adjusting the accounts of my troops, and those of the general storehouse, which I discharged out of my own purse.

On the 10th, his Majesty's packet le Dauphin, commanded by Ensign Tromelin, left the isle of France to go to the Secheyles islands, and put in at the settlement for provisions, which I caused to be delivered to them.

On the 11th, his Majesty's brig le Coureur, which I had sent to Mozambique arrived. The Captain of this vessel informed me, that he had been forced to anchor at the isle of France, and that he could purchase but very few slaves. This, information astonished me, as the articles of trade with which we had been supplied from the general storehouse, had been very considerable. I therefore sent an officer on board to examine the officers and crew, respecting the trade at Mozambique; and I went  
on

on board myself to assist in the examination. In this way I learned, that the Captain had sold forty-two blacks at the isle of France, which were the produce of his cargo, and the rice. I therefore caused him to be put under confinement on board the vessel. Three men from the isle of France were sent on shore, one of whom called himself a taylor, the other a cabinet-maker, and the third a writer. They were all three sick, and had been taken out of the hospital, doubtless with a view to augment the number of the dead at Madagascar.

On the 12th, I received advice that the Rohandrian Cunifaloues was on his way to put himself under the protection of the establishment, in order to resist the Seclaves, who threatened him, and several parties of whom had already set whole villages in flames upon our frontiers.

On the 13th, two Sambarive chiefs, who were attached to my person, informed me, that the King of the Seclaves had sent a secret messenger to Hiavi, King and Chief of Foul Point, to engage him to act against the interests of the establishment, and that Hiavi had held a meeting on this business, in which the envoys of the Seclaves had proposed to Hiavi, to support him in the sovereignty over the whole East coast, on condition that he should make war on the establishment. But that Hiavi would not consent to make war upon the white men; because he said, it was impossible for the King to resist the French, whose Fangafoudi, or forcerers, were stronger than those of the blacks; and that moreover the Baron, having a knowledge of the stars, knew every thing which was contrived against him, and that he (Hiavi) having engaged by oath to be faithful to the establishment, durst not make any attempt against it, as he was sure to die immediately, in case he should break his oath.

On

On the 14th, we were in the midst of the bad season. If it should weaken us, said I to myself, and the supplies be still detained, I may say with Virgil, *Sic vos non vobis, nidificatis aves.*

I received information that Hiavi, notwithstanding his answer to the Seclaves, was inclined to their side, and that he had furnished them with arms and ammunition. This conduct induced me to depress his authority, which was easy to be done, by assuring the Mulatta chiefs, who were descended from Europeans, that the alliance of Hiavi with the Seclaves, would reduce them to servitude, and that when they were reduced to the obedience of Hiavi, they would soon be confounded with his slaves. Their proud spirit would have eagerly seized the instant to withdraw themselves from the subjection to Hiavi, by attaching themselves entirely to the establishment; but I preferred gentle methods to preserve peace and tranquility along the East coast.

From the 15th to the 20th, I held different Cabars, and sent several emissaries to observe the motions of the enemy,

On the 21st, the new dwelling for the Governor was finished, and I went to reside there with the more satisfaction, as I had long been very inconveniently lodged, and had felt the consequences in the effect it had on my health.

On the 22d, the Sambarive chiefs informed me, that the Seclaves had invited them to join them against the whites; but that their nation had answered, by sending them powder, ball, and gun flints (the signal of war), declaring at the same time, that the Sambarives had allied themselves to me with sincerity; that they considered my enemies as their enemies, and that they would not give the Seclaves the trouble of coming to them,

them, because they intended to meet them. I gave an entertainment to this brave nation.

On the 23d, I was informed by my interpreter, that the Sambarives had sent several of their chiefs into different provinces, to engage the people to make war on the Seclaves. This brave nation gave public notice, that all those who did not join them should be considered as their enemies, and that their troops should carry flames and fire into their provinces. This mark of so eminent a degree of attachment affected me greatly, and I ardently wished for an opportunity of convincing this good people of my affection.

On the 14th, I learned positively, that the Fariavas and the Betalimenes had recommended the war against Hiavi, and that his own people mutinied against him, for having entered into an oath with the Seclaves. This news was soon followed by a demand on the part of Hiavi for assistance, which was what I expected.

On the 25th, the chiefs of the Antambours sent me word that several chiefs of the Seclaves, established upon their frontiers, had refused to take arms against the establishment; and that to avoid the rage of their King, a party of them had taken refuge amongst the Antambour, and others with Cunifaloues the chief, who had sent me this information, and was himself coming.

On the 29th, Diafaick, chief of the Machinera, non, and confidant of Hiavi, came to demand assistance against his enemies, at the same time that he complained that reports were current that I had abandoned Hiavi, for which reason it was absolutely necessary that I should declare in his favour, in order to appease the troubles and revolts which had been excited among his own subjects. I replied, that Hiavi had brought himself into the difficulties he now experienced; that he had himself given reasons for his enemies to declare against him

a second

a second time, in consequence of the league he had made with the Seclaves against the government; that his own proceeding had served as a warning to the Betalimenes and Fariavas, with regard to their behaviour, from whom it was that I had received information of all the intrigues of Hiavi. The chief Fauna, confounded at my answer, threw himself at my feet, begging pardon for Hiavi, and protesting that he would recall his master to his duty. In my definitive answer, I insisted that Hiavi should send his brother to me with five hundred armed men, with orders to march against the Seclaves, and should publicly renounce the alliance of that nation. I promised, that in the mean time I would prevent his enemies from making any attempts against him, but that on the slightest appearance of refusal on his part, I would openly join his opponents.

It cannot easily be imagined, with what precaution I found it necessary to act with regard to the inhabitants of this island. Revolutions are so sudden, that to prevent them, I was forced to become an orator, to conform to the character of this nation. It was a very unhappy circumstance that I was without force; the smallest augmentation would have been sufficient to have enabled me to have effected whatever revolutions I thought proper; but having no more than one hundred men, and those exhausted by fatigue, they could not be able to guard one hundred and eighty leagues of coast, which was the space contained by our different settlements. It was impossible therefore to remove so many obstacles as presented themselves, without employing stratagem or cabal; a situation very afflicting for a military man, when his operations can only be carried on in the cabinet in a tedious and disgraceful way.

February the 1st, a signal was hung out at the mountain, that a ship was in sight.

On

On the 2d, the signal still appeared; but I discovered nothing but a small vessel, which seemed to be a banion, or the vessel of some person, whose wretched fortune required the assistance of piracy, or the employment of a spy.

On the 3d, the Antambour and Saphirobai chiefs came to declare to me, that being determined to give invariable proofs of their attachment to the establishment, they requested me to accept fifteen hundred armed men of their nation, to be employed against the Seclaves. Good news, exclaimed I, the example of my brave Sambarives will invite the other nations to imitate them.

A private vessel named the Lizard, anchored in the harbour, and the Captain, Mr. St. Etheard, made me an offer of his cargo on the King's account. It consisted of cloth, brandy, and sugar.

On the 8th, I received positive information of the march of the Seclaves, who directed their course towards our frontiers.

Between the 9th and 15th, I visited my posts, and saw that the artillery was in a proper situation for service.

My officers, being informed by the natives of the approach of the Seclaves, and perceiving their troops to be greatly weakened, were in no small consternation, and could not avoid repeating some of the circumstances to me; because as they saw me apparently at my ease, in such a critical situation, they imagined that I was unacquainted with the proceedings of our enemies.

From the 17th to the 23d, I cleared the environs of fort Louis, in order to discover the approach of the enemy more readily; and I was particularly busied in making fire balls, rockets, fuzees, and fire lances, in order to prevent the enemy from harrassing us.

On

On the 23d, the chiefs of the province, Antivairai and Angontzi, came to offer me five hundred warriors. This news afforded me some small comfort, and I began to collect myself against the unhappy events that threatened the establishment. The greatest part of the bad season was now over, and our sick were not so numerous as I expected.

The envoys of Lambouin, King of the North, arrived, and demanded an assembly. They declared on the part of their Prince, that he was already in the field to attack the Seclaves on his side, and waited only for my orders for that purpose. The desire of this chief to establish a constant trade with the settlement, in order to secure its protection, which was necessary to him against the Seclaves, and to preserve his authority, could not fail of being productive of the greatest advantage to the establishment.

On the 2d, I was informed of the arrival of envoys from the chief Cunifaloues, who informed me of the approach of their chief, together with Rozai, cousin of the King of the Seclaves, who was driven by his relation out of his native country, and probably came to take advantage of the present circumstances, and adapt them to his desire of revenge. After having shewn every sign of friendship to the envoys of the chief Cunifaloues, I sent several spies to meet him, in order to observe his conduct, and to prevent a surprize.

The chief Cunifaloues, possessor of the province of Santianak, had been tributary for the space of eighteen years to the Seclaves, who often had ravaged his province, under the specious pretence of collecting the tribute. I therefore had reason to think, that the motive of his journey was founded on the hope of throwing off the subjection to the Seclaves, by the assistance of the establishment. The coincidence of this chief in my views promised greatly to diminish the forces of the Seclaves, because

cause his example would lead others. Rozai, the chief of the Seclaves, who came with him, is of the reigning family of that nation, of which the father of the present King usurped the crown, after having rendered himself master of the country, by a sudden revolt of the inhabitants, and having without compassion, reduced the ancient royal family to servitude. I was assured that Rozai had many partizans in the nation, who, if they saw him at the head of some forces, would join his party. All these circumstances gave me reason to hope, that I might derive great advantages this year from a campaign, and I might have undoubtedly struck a fine stroke, if the supplies had arrived. As the war I am about to describe, relates to the country of the Seclaves, it may be proper to give a slight notion of that kingdom and nation.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE KINGDOM OF THE SECLAVES, CALLED BOYANA,

March, 1776. The kingdom of the Seclaves extends from the Bay of Massaheli, on the West coast of Madagascar, lying between  $44^{\circ} 20'$  and  $42^{\circ}$  longitude from Paris, and  $14^{\circ}$  and  $16^{\circ}$  South latitude, upon the same Western coast of the island. Here it must be observed, that this kingdom is not to be confounded with the ancient country of the Seclaves, which extends much further to the Southward, and no longer depends upon the same chief. The authority of the first chief of the Seclaves, who from time immemorial has possessed the title of King, is despotic. His whole people are slaves, and the chiefs who govern the different provinces, are nominated by him. Their property and lives are

are in his hands. He always keeps an army of three thousand warriors on foot. His authority which he often abuses, renders him formidable to his unhappy people, who mortally hate him.

The Arabians of the islands Johanna, Comoro, and Mayotto, have established a factory at Maronvai, the capital of the Seclaves, which is at all times supplied with effects and merchandizes, consisting of Surat cloth, combs, silver bracelets, gold buckles, razors, knives, glass beads, &c. in exchange for which they receive skins, incense, benjamin, amber, wax, and wood in planks. The facility which the King of the Seclaves finds in the commerce of the Arabians, and that which he has hitherto found in obtaining arms, gunpowder, and brandy, from private ships, which touch at Madagascar, and which he receives in payment of tribute from different provinces on the Eastern coast, renders him averse to the establishment of a direct trade with the French. It may likewise be true, that the Arabians, jealous of our rival commerce, may have inspired him with sentiments contrary to the interests of the establishment. But, as since my arrival, all the provinces of the East coast have shaken off their yoke, and no longer supply them with arms and warlike stores, the Seclaves cannot but be quickly reduced.

The country of the Seclaves enjoys a very wholesome air. It is flat, has few woods, and is watered with an infinity of fine rivers, and abounds with immense plains, inhabited by thousands of wild oxen, which belong to any one who can take them. The King of the Seclaves might raise an army of thirty thousand men, if he possessed the affections of his people; but upon the least appearance of war, it is usual for them to fly into the mountains, towards the Eastern coast. From these emigrations several different nations have been formed.

formed. Since my arrival in this island, I have always maintained detachments, either in the country of the Seclaves, or on its frontiers, and they have experienced none of those disorders which prevail near the sea coast to the Eastward. For this reason I am convinced, that the Western coast would be more favourable to the Europeans. Such an advantage, added to that of possessing several excellent harbours, by which a communication might be formed with the coast of Africa, renders it highly deserving of the utmost exertions of a Governor established at this place, to secure this country; for which purpose nothing more is necessary than to engage the whole of the Eastern coast in his interest against the Seclaves. The happiest occasion now presented itself; for the King of the Seclaves, having declared war against the establishment, and its allies, it became unnecessary to confine ourselves to defensive operations. But the weakness and extreme wants of my troops, tended but too much to check my ardour.

A courier from Foul Point brought me the good news, that Hiavi had expressed the most sincere repentance at having entered into an oath with the Seclaves; and that in order to repair his fault, he had sent twelve hundred warriors to my assistance.

The chief Cunifaloues at length arrived on the 6th, I ordered the meeting to be held on the 8th, to which I invited the chiefs of the Sambarives, Saphirobai, Antambours, Antavacas, and Antavolisbei. When the assembly met Cunifaloues addressed me as follows: I write down the proper words of the discourse of the blacks, in order that those who succeed me might be familiarized with their expression. "I Cunifaloues, the unfortunate chief of the noble race of Santianak, being subjected by the laws of war to the Seclaves, come to render what I owe to the great warrior and great chief

chief of the white men, whose name be blessed, and arm supported by the force of God. Being assured that the reports which were spread of the war, which the Seclaves proposed to make against thee were true, I have hastened to offer thee my arm with those of my people. Dispose of our goods at thy pleasure. Thy will shall ever be mine, and that of my children. Deign to receive our oath, to assure thee that Cunifaloues acknowledges no other master but thyself."

This harangue was succeeded by a shout of joy, which the followers of this chief, consisting of about three hundred warriors, repeated several times. After which I made the following answer: "Thy reputation, my friend, and thy misfortunes, have long since assured thee of my protection. I am unacquainted with none of thy pretensions, and the just vengeance which thou entertainest against the usurper of the Seclaves; and thou mayest be assured that my arm shall support thine. But with regard to the submission thou hast made to me, I say that thou art in an error. Know then that it is not conformable to my principles, to reduce the brave nations of Madagascar to servitude. I demand only thy friendship towards myself; but I require thy attachment to the union which exists at this day, between the nations whose deputies are here assembled. My only intention is to inform thee of our interests; to explain the advantages of commerce, and of a well-established government, and to communicate light which may lead to happiness. If thou art resolved to unite in our common interests, thou wilt make an oath of fidelity to the union, and receive orders from my mouth, or the mouth of those who may succeed me."

The chief had scarcely heard my answer, before he demanded to enter into the oath of fidelity, obliging

obliging himself to pay to the establishment the same tribute which he had paid to the Seclaves, and offering one thousand warriors of his nation to be directed by my orders, according to circumstances. Upon his declaration, I proceeded to the ceremony of the oath, which was performed with all the decency imaginable. It was scarcely ended before Rozai, the chief of the Seclaves, who arrived with Cunifaloues, directed a second speech to me as follows: "I, Rozai, the unfortunate prince of Boyana, seeking amongst strangers a support against the injustice of the usurper of my kingdom, who, not content with having deprived me of my country, retains my wives and children in slavery, throw myself at thy knees for protection. The people say of thee, that thou callest thyself the father of the unhappy: Reject not then the prayer of a prince who reclaims thy assistance. As a proof of my submission, thou shalt receive my oath, and mayest depend on me from henceforth among the number of thy faithful friends."

The following was my answer: "I grant to the prince Rozai, who reclaims the protection of the establishment, and that of the united nations, the constant and permanent support of our arms, with so much the greater satisfaction, as his misfortunes plead in his favour; a plea which at all times has found a support against injustice and oppression. In the mean time, the prince Rozai may assure himself of our protection by oath."

After having thus satisfied the unfortunate chief, I addressed myself to him and the chief Cunifaloues, advising them to reflect well on what they had done, by connecting themselves under oath to the interests of the establishment, whose protection they had thereby secured as long as they should continue faithful to their engagements: But that, if they should have the misfortune to break their oaths,  
it

it would be no longer in my power to prevent the unhappy consequences which might result to them, their families, and subjects.

On the 9th, 10th, and 11th, the chiefs of the Eastern coast gave an entertainment to Cunifaloues and Rozai. My brave Sambarives particularly distinguished themselves. The chiefs, Cunifaloues and Rozai, afterwards required to be dismissed in order to take the field against the Seclaves. They informed me likewise, that they should lose no time in sending emissaries into all the different provinces which were subject to the Seclaves, to engage them to join the part of Rozai, and demanded favour and protection for those who should enter into their league.

On the 12th, the chief Lambarault arrived with twelve armed boats and two hundred warriors. He informed me, that he came to the assistance of the establishment; that being the son of a white man, he was desirous of being one of the first in the combat; and that several of his subjects, who had returned from the country of the Seclaves, had reported to him that the enemy was no more than five days march from our frontiers; for which reason, if I would accept his assistance, he would go forth to reconnoitre them. I received this chief in a friendly manner, but for several reasons I kept him near me.

On the 13th, my interpreter informed me, that his people had reported, that the chiefs of the different provinces proposed to send deputies to me to inquire, whether my intention was to remain shut up till the arrival of the Seclaves, or whether I was afraid to go forth to meet them? They informed me likewise, that all the chiefs had the most unbounded confidence in me; but that they were apprehensive that by remaining simply on the defensive, I should sacrifice the provinces to the

outrages of the Seclaves. This report determined me to avail myself of the state of affairs, to engage all the coast in my interest, whose chiefs would join me with so much the greater readiness in the field, as by fighting the Seclaves, their possessions would be defended from their ravages.

I was thus at length engaged again, in an important affair, which required a decision, whether without support or assistance from the Europeans, with a handful of men, I should undertake an operation of the greatest consequence. Fortunately, however, the unhealthy season was over, and my troops were in sufficient health to make up by their courage, for the unfortunate position they were in.

On the 14th, the Sambarive chiefs waited upon me, and presented to me several deputies of the different provinces, which their nation had sent to inform me, that they were all ready to take the field, and waited only for my naming the day on which they were to join me. Upon which I replied, that having forces more than sufficient about me to prevent the Seclaves from continuing their hostilities upon my frontiers, I had at first resolved not to engage my allies to follow me, lest the cultivation of their lands might be interrupted; but that being unable any longer to resist their pressing instances and voluntary offers, I should accept their assistance to partake with them the glory of having punished the Seclaves; and that in consequence I should dispatch my couriers, to inform the whole coast of my resolutions to take the field at the end of the following month; to march directly to the enemy, and force them to come to battle.

I had hardly concluded my answer, when they all with one voice cried out, "The Seclaves shall

be

be vanquished, and become our slaves." The rest of the day was consumed in dancing and war songs. For my own part, I was rather uneasy. I found myself on the point of becoming engaged in a serious affair, without the assistance or orders of the Court, which might at that moment be ready to decide upon giving up the establishment, and recalling my troops, in consequence of the false reports which the chief of the isle of France had made. Three years had already past without my having received the smallest order relative to my service.

On the 15th, after many deliberations, I at last determined to declare war against the Seclaves; and to order all the chiefs to repair to the standard at the end of April, with their principal warriors.

On the 20th, I commanded all my officers to assemble at fort Louis, to hold a council on the 1st of April, in order that I might have no reason to reproach myself in an enterprize of such delicacy, the engaging in which might be imputed to me as a fault by my adversaries. The Mozambiques made great progress in this exercise, and began to be used to the noise, as well as manœuvres of the guns. In order that the pieces might be the better served, I appointed a cannonier to each, from among my volunteers, with one workman and four Mozambiques. I had nine pieces ready for service, two of which carried a pound ball. I had great reason to be satisfied with the progress of the Mozambiques, for on the 25th, they worked the guns very well, without any assistance or command from the Europeans.

On the 27th, my spies having returned from the Seclaves, reported, that the enemy had halted in the province of Antanquins, to wait for the junction of a strong party; that their design was to

fall directly on the establishment, and in the mean time to ravage the frontiers, whose inhabitants had taken refuge in the woods, and waited only for our arrival to join us.

On the 1st of April, a general assembly of the corps was held, in which the annexed result was determined on (LXX); in which it was concluded, that the troops should be formed into two divisions, one under the order of the Chevalier de Sanglier, Captain of the corps, and Commander in my absence, which should be appointed to guard our posts at Louisbourg, fort St. John, and fort Augustus; while the other should immediately take the field under my orders, and carry the war to the frontiers of the Seclaves, in order to check them, until supplies or the orders which I expected, might arrive. Immediately after this decision of council, I displayed the red flag as the signal of war well known in this island.

On the 2d, I was busied in exercising my troops. The artillery was well served, and there were very few of my volunteers on whom I could not depend for bringing down his man at the distance of two hundred paces, which assured me that I should give a good account of my enemies; but, in order that the campaign might not be carried on in a confused manner, I appointed the following order, in which is included the whole force under my command, consisting of four thousand one hundred and thirteen men, in three divisions, which I called the forces of the establishment.

Moximiques, for on the 25th they worked the guns very well, without any assistance or command from the Europeans.

On the 27th, my spies having returned from the Seclaves, reported, that the enemy had halted in the province of Atlantique, to wait for the junction of a strong party, that their design was to fall

*The Left.*

Commander.	
Mr. le Cerf, Captain	1
— Corbi, Lieutenant	1
Le Maitre, Interpreter	1
D'Ecole, Interpreter	1
Volunteers	112
Artillery, three Pieces, Served by	
Cannoniers	3
Mozambique Commanders	2
Mozambique Slaves	6
Malgagos Commanders	2
Malgagos Warriors	1000
	<hr/>
	1129

*The Centre.*

Commander.	
Baron de Benyowsky	1
Chev. de la Tour, Lieut.	1
Evali, Ensign	1
Mayeur, Interpreter	1
Volunteers	64
Artillery, three Pieces, Served by	
Cannoniers	4
Mozambique Commanders	2
Mozambique Slaves	6
Malgagos Commanders	2
Malgagos Warriors	1800
	<hr/>
	1822

*In the Hospital Service.*

Popengui, Surgeon-Major	1
His Aide Major	1
Mozambique Slaves	12
	<hr/>
Total of the Divisions	4113 Men.

*The Right.*

Commander.	
De Melandre, Captain	1
De la Bouillage, Lieut.	1
Diard, Interpreter	1
Volunteers	72
Artillery, three Pieces, Served by	
M. de la Min.	1
Cannoniers	2
Mozambique Commanders	2
Mozambique Slaves	6
Malgagos Commanders	2
Malgagos Warriors	1000
	<hr/>
	1088

Such were the forces with which I proceeded to take the field; but it must be observed, that my three divisions were to be reinforced with the troops our allies were obliged to furnish; that is to say, for the right division, three thousand six hundred natives; for the centre, five thousand; for the left, three thousand six hundred; which on the whole, amounted to not less than sixteen thousand three hundred and thirteen men.

On the 3d, I was busied in drawing out orders for Mr. de Sanglier, Commander in my absence, in order that he might conform to my intentions in every thing which related to the security of the posts entrusted to his care. I left with him seventy-six white men, with four officers; one hundred and twenty Mozambiques, and six hundred and eighty Malgagos, which was a sufficient number to defend the posts under his command.

On the 4th, I established a camp in the plain, at the distance of one league from Louisbourg, with a view to habituate my troops to obedience of orders. From this place it was, that I this day sent my orders to the chiefs of our allies, to repair at the end of the month to Hirbay, near Mananhar, at the distance of fifteen leagues from the plain, where I then was. I made choice of this place of rendezvous on account of the facility of procuring subsistence for sixteen thousand men, whose supplies would have exhausted the magazines of the establishment.

On the 10th, my envoys returned, and assured me that all the chiefs were ready to march, and would be at Hirbay before me. On the same day the Sambarives gave a great festival of war, according to the custom of the country. The Saphirobai did the same, and nothing was seen but fires through the whole extent of the coast.

On

On the 11th, I made up my packets for the Minister, to whom I gave an account of my operations.

From the 12th to the 15th, I was employed in making my final visits to the posts.

On the 16th, being desirous of accelerating my march as much as possible, I caused all the boats to be repaired for the transport of the artillery and ammunition. My allies had engaged to send sixty other boats for the transport of my troops; so that I had reason to hope that I might set sail on the 30th, and arrive at Hirbay on the 2d of May, from which place I had determined to depart on the 4th, with a view to reach the other side of the mountains on the 8th or 9th, and offer battle to the enemy on the 10th or 11th. The rest of the campaign would depend on their decision, or rather on the orders of the Court, which I waited for, and the uncertain tenor of which obliged me not to proceed too far in the present juncture.

On the 18th, being the eve of my departure, and my determination being made, nothing remained but to follow it. Adieu then to reflections; for when a military adventure is once begun, it must be followed with spirit.

This day Mulem, the brother of Hiavi, arrived, with twelve hundred and fifty warriors, to remain subject to my orders; these were intended to form my guard, and Hiavi had distinguished himself by selecting young men, among whom there was not one under five feet eight inches in height.

On the 20th, two couriers from the North informed me, that the chiefs of the provinces of Antimananhar, Angontzi, and Antiamak, were already on their march with three thousand warriors, one half of whom were coming by land,  
and

and the other half in boats. They assured me likewise, that these chiefs had made an oath not to quit my colours, until Cimanour, King of the Seclaves, was made prisoner of war. D'Ecole, my interpreter, was at the head of this army.

The preparations for the campaign, and the movements I was obliged to make, will not permit me to continue my memoir regularly from day to day, I shall therefore resume it after my return.

#### HISTORY OF THE WAR AGAINST THE SECLAVES.

I set sail with my little squadron, composed of one hundred and ninety-three boats of the country, on the 30th of April, and stopped at the isle d'Aiguillon, where I inspected the loading, and rectified the considerable inequalities I found in the several boats.

May the 1st, 1776. We set sail for Manambia, distant seven leagues from Louisburgh, where I found a very agreeable plain to pitch my camp. In the evening of the same day, I received a visit from the chiefs of the place. The principal chief, named Tacalounin, presented me with three hundred warriors to follow me, and also with six boats loaded with provisions, and thirty oxen.

May the 2d. I raised my camp, and sailed for Tanfon, where, on my arrival in the evening, I found the troop of Tacalounis already encamped, and supplied with provisions and cattle. At the close of the night the chiefs of this country came to salute me; they brought us ten boats, loaded with provisions, and drink made of honey and melasses, with three hundred young men for the military service.

On the 3d, just as I was embarking to continue my journey, I received envoys from Cunifaloues, who informed me that there were several parties of

of the Seclaves about, who only waited for a favourable instant to surprize me. They assured me likewise, that their chiefs were already in the field, but that they were greatly apprehensive that the Seclaves, whose forces were much superior to theirs, would attack them with advantage before my arrival. After I had heard the report of these envoys, I ordered them to follow me; and to prevent my troop of blacks, who conveyed our provision, from being surprized in some of the defiles, I ordered Mr. de Malendre, Captain and Commander of the right division, to protect them with his troop.

After this precaution I embarked, and continued my route towards Hirbay; but the wind blowing strong a-head, forced me to anchor at Fontzimarou. One of my boats, loaded with artillery, struck on a rock and sunk; another was bulged, and several others run aground, which obliged me to leave the left division behind, to recover the cannon and their carriages, and bring them to Hirbay. The chiefs of the place supplied me with divers, and boats to conduct my division to the rendezvous, where we arrived in safety on the 4th. But I had scarcely time to pitch my camp, before several blacks informed me, that the division commanded by Mr. Malendre, had been attacked by the Seclaves. In consequence of this news, I detached twelve boats, with a part of my troop and Malgagos, to their assistance. They soon returned with the information, that they had discovered the division on its march, at a small distance from us, and that the troops appeared undisturbed. These last arrived likewise about midnight, safe and sound; and their Commander informed me, that he had indeed been attacked by the Seclaves in a defile; but that the enemy had always kept at a very great distance firing at his party,

party, though their shot could not reach him; and that he, perceiving that to be the case, had preferred marching strait to me, instead of stopping to cause any embarrassment.

On the 5th, my left division at last arrived, and all my people were then together. The number of warriors which the chiefs had promised me, increased every day, and the continual consumption of provisions becoming an object of great consequence, obliged me to quicken my operations.

On the 7th, I sent back the envoys of Cunifaloues, to inform him of my march; and on the same day I received information, from a party whom I had sent upon the scout, that the Seclaves had disappeared, and had withdrawn towards the frontier of the province of Antonguin.

Upon this report, I sent my right division to clear the passage of the mountains, and soon afterwards followed them with my whole army. With much fatigue and difficulty, we passed the mountains Vohibey. Our pieces of artillery, mounted on carriages, were very ill calculated for service in such mountainous and irregular countries as this. I should have been much better satisfied, if they had been mounted on swivels, after the manner of pateraroes.

After I had passed the mountains, I encamped near the river called Mananhar, where I was joined by the chiefs Antimogols, Antivoieson, Antivohibey, and the Sambarives. Their number amounted to near four thousand men, well armed.

In this place I rested my troops two days; and after having established a store of provisions in the place, and appointed a party of my left division for a guard, I raised my camp, and marched in three columns, through a wood of six leagues extent from East to West. When I came out of the wood, I discovered the camp of my first division,  
and

and three other camps of the Seclaves posted opposite them. But as all my people were fatigued, I determined to remain in the skirts of the wood, that I might not be discovered by the enemy, whom I proposed to attack as soon as my army had taken some repose. To this effect I acquainted the Commander of the first division with my intention, in order that he might not be alarmed at a brisk attack on my part.

At three in the morning, I established a rear guard for the securing of our equipage, and marched directly to the first camp of the enemy. At sun rise, I was within cannon shot of them. At my approach, they arranged themselves in several divisions at the head of their camp, where they appeared disposed to receive us, and immediately began to fire. The black troops of our allies, notwithstanding my prohibition, answered their fire, which obliged me to bring forward my cannon. Twenty shot from these put the enemy to flight, and caused them to abandon their first camp, which I passed without stopping, and proceeded to the second, which I found in the hands of my first division.

The enemy perceiving their two camps destroyed, quitted the third of themselves, which was soon consumed by the flames. This affair cost the Seclaves eighty men killed, and fifty wounded, who were made prisoners, while none of my party were hurt, excepting a few natives, who were wounded. The allied chiefs, encouraged by this success, demanded permission to chase the enemy; and I agreed to their request with great willingness, as their Cabars or assemblies had become very chargeable.

After the departure of the blacks, I advanced my camp into an agreeable plain, filled with orange trees, banana trees, and cardamom plants.

On

On the 14th, the chief Cunifaloues joined me with fifteen hundred warriors. He told me that the Seclaves, who had fled, had spread a report every where, that it was not the white men who vanquished them, but devils which were mixed among them, and had vomited dreadful flames upon their army.

On the 17th, several parties of the Seclaves arrived, and intreated forgiveness; at the same time that they begged that I would come into their province to defend them from the ravages of my black allies.

On the 18th, I dispatched Mr. de Malendre to Antonguin, in order to restrain the allied chiefs within the limits of discipline; and the same evening I raised my camp to proceed in person to the province of Antonguin.

On the 19th, I came in sight of a village of the Antongueze, composed of about five hundred houses well pallisaded, and defended by a ditch. Beyond the village, I discovered six camps, which the chiefs of our allies had established. For my part, I rather chose to form my camp on the side where I was, in order to enjoy a state of tranquillity, which must be entirely renounced on mixing with the natives.

On the 20th, all the chiefs of my party waited upon me to congratulate me, and to give me a pompous account of their warlike exploits. They assured me, that the Seclaves, not thinking proper to rally upon their frontiers, had fled as far as the Western coast of the island.

On the 22d, the chief of Antonguin, named Tihenbato, came to my camp in person, having his head and beard shaved in token of submission. He intreated forgiveness for having followed the Seclaves, and immediately entered into the oath of fidelity, acknowledging his province to be conquered:

quired: at the same time that he requested it should be entrusted to him on condition of his paying an annual tribute. It was from this chief that I obtained more particular information concerning the Seclaves, which convinced me that the King of that nation was cured of the desire of making war upon the Europeans. He also informed me, that the King of the Seclaves had sent envoys to Hiavi, to request his intercession with me to procure peace at any rate.

Some days afterwards I received envoys from the King of the Seclaves, who proposed a treaty of peace; but as I did not think proper to consent, I dismissed them with the simple answer, that the chiefs of the Seclaves ought not to ask for peace, but pardon; that I proposed to stay in the province to allow them time to make their determination, and that their King ought not to hesitate in submitting himself to the laws established among the chiefs of the Eastern coast.

After the departure of these envoys, I remained encamped on the spot, until the end of the month; during which time I sent several officers to make discoveries in the country. Their reports convinced me more and more of the expediency of forming an establishment in this charming, rich and agreeable country; but being without forces and supplies, I had no power to act.

June the 1st, 1776. I received advice from M. le Cerf, Commander of the left division, that certain blacks who came from Louisbourg, had assured him, that they saw two ships enter the harbour. This news gave me great encouragement.

On the 5th, the long expected courier at last arrived with packets from the Court, in which I learned with inexpressible satisfaction, that the Minister had sent from France his Majesty's vessel la Sirene, with ammunition, provisions and money for

for trade; and that this supply would soon be followed by others of greater importance. But alas, my joy was of short duration; for on the other hand, I learned by the dispatches from the isle of France, that the corvette was lost to the Southward of fort Dauphin, and consequently, that I could expect no supplies. And to crown the whole, the Minister, in a private letter, informed me, that his Majesty had reserved the communication of his intentions with regard to Madagascar, until the end of the year; for which reason I must confine my operations to the preservation of the posts, &c.

All these events tended only to encrease my sollicitude, and more especially as my presence was become necessary at Louisbourg. I found myself forced to suspend my military operations. I therefore assembled my officers, in order to come to a final decision respecting the steps proper to be taken in our present situation.

On the 6th, I held a council, and conformably to its decision, I determined to return to Louisbourg, leaving my troops under the orders of Mr. de Malendre, with all our black allies, whom I persuaded to remain satisfied with the advantages and the victory gained over our enemies. The chiefs Cunifaloues and Rozai, alone were discontented, because they feared the resentment of the Seclaves; but I encouraged them, by a promise under oath, to come to their assistance as soon as ever I should hear that the Seclaves marched against them. Cunifaloues was at last satisfied with my promise; but the unfortunate prince Rozai was inconsolable, and declared that he would quit me no more, because as he had once had recourse to me, all his hopes depended on the alliance of the Europeans. As I saw this chief was so greatly oppressed with his misfortunes, I promised to send

to the Seclaves to reclaim his wives, his children, and all his family; and assured him, that he might depend on receiving speedy satisfaction in this respect. This assurance set his mind at ease.

On the 7th, I distributed presents to the chiefs, and likewise divided the captures we had made; and after having secured the submission of the province of Antonguin, I departed on my way to Louisbourg.

On the 8th, at the close of day, I began my march, and on the 12th, I arrived at Louisbourg, where my time was intirely taken up in preparing my dispatches for the Minister, excepting only that I was occasionally interrupted by the festivals which the chiefs gave to their people, in celebration of our victory over the enemy.

On the 21st, his Majesty's corvette the Iphigenia, set sail on her return to the isle of France.

On the 26th, a squadron of boats appeared in sight, directing their course towards the harbour.

On the 22d, the squadron anchored in the harbour, and were received by my whole troop with shouts of joy. The same evening the black troops landed, and established their camp round Louisbourg. Mr. de Malendre informed me, that after my departure he had received envoys from the Seclaves, who, in the name of their King, had proposed preliminaries to a treaty of peace; but as he had no authority from me to act in a business of that nature, he informed them that their King might be convinced by my sudden departure, that I was not disposed to carry on the war against them with efficacy; and that consequently, he would do well to send envoys directly to me, to take advantage of my good disposition towards them, and bring this affair to a termination, in which he would certainly succeed, if, as a mark of good faith, he should send the family of the prince Rozai to me. My officer likewise informed me, that  
the

the envoys were very well satisfied with his answer, and immediately returned; and that the whole of the allied chiefs had exactly obeyed his commands. The rest of the month was consumed in entertainments, which greatly diminished the stock of liquor I had purchased, and imported from the isle of France.

On the 1st of July, all the chiefs refused to depart for their provinces with their troops, and declared that they had reasons for not leaving me at that moment.

From the 2d to the 9th, I was employed in visiting the posts, while my troops who had returned from the campaign, availed themselves of the time I had granted to rest themselves after their fatigue.

On the 10th, I divided my troops to encrease the garrisons of my posts, and caused the different materials for building to be collected.

On the 11th, Mr. Mayeur, my principal interpreter, having been charged by me to discover the reason why the chiefs had determined not to quit me, informed me, that Hiavi had received a letter from the isle of France, by which he understood that I was to be relieved, and sent to France to take my trial; and that the brother of Hiavi, having communicated this news to several of the chiefs, they had determined to oppose by force all those who might attempt to carry such a design into execution. This information, which convinced me of the sincere attachment of the whole nation, afforded me some consolation in my disgrace; but was not sufficient to dispel my disagreeable reflections.

On the 12th, several bodies of the natives from the Seclaves, requested permission to establish themselves on the territory of the establishment, subject to its regulations, I granted them the lands on the left branch of the river of Tingballe. The power

of this province daily increasing, I could easily perceive that it will hereafter possess one third of the population of the island.

From the 18th to the 19th I made an excursion on the business of discovery, into the interior parts of the island to the northward, where I found several considerable rivers, between the chain of the mountains of Ramangasi and Volisbey, at the feet of which I found various minerals, and very fine rock crystals, some of which were coloured.

August 1, 1776. As the tranquillity of the country afforded me that repose which I had not experienced hitherto, I visited the habitations and settlements, which I found in good order and cultivation. I therefore determined to allot lands to the individuals for the formation of villages. Several soldiers and others requested grants, which I accordingly made out, to the number of sixty-four.

On the 3d, I assembled the chiefs, and represented to them, that their residence on the spot tended to exhaust the country; and observed, that if they were absolutely determined to reside near me, I would advise them to send back their people into their provinces, as they would always have time to collect them together. In consequence of this insinuation, they demanded when I expected vessels to arrive from Europe; and as I could not answer positively, they requested me not to make any proposal to them for their departure, as in this affair, they only followed the impulse of their friendship for me, and were determined to perish, rather than quit me.

On the 9th, I received news that a private ship was lost to the northward; I therefore sent his Majesty's vessel, the *Coureur*, to collect the people, and bring them to Louisbourg.

On the 14th, I was informed of the arrival of envoys from the Seclaves, who presented to me the

family of the Prince Rozai, as a proof of the good disposition of that nation. These envoys likewise presented three hundred oxen, and sixty slaves, in the name of their nation, and demanded that I would make oath not to enter into a war against them in future. I accepted the presents, and received the family of Rozai with pleasure; but the promise not to make war, being an engagement which related to the interests of the settlement, I replied, that I was ready to enter into such an oath, provided the King of the Seclaves would likewise make the same, and give assurances that he would accede to the union of the chiefs and people of the east coasts, and would acknowledge himself a member of that union, and subject to its decisions. I moreover insisted, that he should permit the free entrance of all merchandize sent from the establishments into his country, for the purpose of carrying on an uninterrupted commerce with his people; and as the preservation and safe keeping of merchandize required particular care, that he should permit me to build in proper places, store-houses, which might serve as places of entertainment to my troops, and to travellers. The envoys replied, that they could make no stipulations in these respects, but that they would depart without delay, to inform their master of my intentions, in order that he might determine how to act. When these envoys were about to depart, I loaded them with presents; and they promised me, upon their oath, to use every exertion to induce their master to accept my propositions, and attach himself entirely to me.

On the 16th, the Sieur Mayeur informed me that the chiefs Raoul, Manding, Raffangour, and Ramaraombe, demanded an audience, as deputies from their nations. This extraordinary communication, which had been hitherto unusual, gave me some surprise: in consequence of which I immediately

diately granted the audience, and rose up to meet them, as I supposed they were already on their way. But the Sieur Mayeur informed me, that the said chiefs were still in their camp, busied in preparations to present themselves in ceremony; and that he would go and acquaint them, with my permission. Immediately after his departure, I invited several officers of the troops, and of the administrations, to be present at my audience, which seemed likely to be productive of consequences; for the manner in which the deputies were announced to me, convinced me that they had some affair of importance to propose, and in this I was not deceived. About ten, the guard of the fort discovered two bodies of armed troops, marching in columns, with drums beating and colours flying, and called out to arms; but the officer of the guard being in the secret, as I afterwards learned, did not oppose their march, but only challenged them, and sent a report to me. I soon discovered the troop myself, which consisted of 1,200 men, with the chiefs and deputies at their head, preceded by the standards of their provinces. On their arrival at the parade before the Governor's house, after they were drawn out, and had grounded their arms, the deputies advanced towards the hall, where they were received and conducted to me by my officers. After the first salutation, I caused seats, which consisted of low chairs, used in this country on occasions of ceremony, to be presented to the chiefs; three seated themselves, but the chief Raffangour remained standing, and spoke the following words, which I here give accurately:

“ Blessed be the day which brought thee into the  
“ world. Blessed be thy parents, who have taken  
“ care of thy infancy; and blessed be the hour in  
“ which thou didst set thy foot upon our island.

Q 2

“ The

“ The Malgagos chiefs and captains, whose hearts  
“ thou hast gained, who love thee, and are faithfully  
“ attached to thee, have received information that  
“ the French King intends to appoint another in  
“ thy place; and that he is angry with thee because  
“ thou hast refused to deliver us to his slavery: they  
“ have therefore met, and have held cabars, to decide  
“ upon the manner in which they should act, if this  
“ should prove true. Their love and their attach-  
“ ment for thee, have obliged me, in this circum-  
“ stance, to reveal to thee the secret of thy birth,  
“ and thy rights over this immense country, all  
“ whose people adore thee. Yes, I myself, Raffan-  
“ gour, reputed the sole survivor of the family of  
“ Ramini, I have renounced this sacred right, to  
“ declare thee the only true inheritor of Ramini.  
“ The spirit of God, which reigns over our cabars,  
“ caused all the chiefs and captains to make oath,  
“ that they would acknowledge thee their Ampan-  
“ facabe; that they would no more quit thee, but  
“ preserve thy person, at the price of their lives,  
“ against all the violence of the French.

After this declaration he sat down, and caused the chief Raoul to rise, and deliver his message, which was as follows.

“ I, Raoul, chief of the Saphirobai, sent to thee by  
“ the chiefs and captains of several nations, de-  
“ mand, that thou wilt grant to-morrow, a pub-  
“ lic cabar, to render thee homage of our fidelity  
“ and obedience. I am likewise charged to re-  
“ quest, that thou wilt not display the white stand-  
“ ard, but the blue, in sign that thou heartily  
“ acceptest our submission.

“ The chiefs and captains, assembled in cabar,  
“ have likewise commissioned me to request, that  
“ thou wilt keep the officers and soldiers at a dis-  
“ tance from the place in which this cabar shall be  
“ held; and that, in the mean time, thou wilt  
“ keep,

“ keep, as a guard, the twelve hundred warriors,  
“ which the nation will constantly maintain around  
“ thee.”

After this exposition, he likewise seated himself, in expectation of my answer. This unforeseen proceeding was not a little embarrassing: but as I was desirous of time to reflect, and form proper combinations, I immediately replied, that I should with pleasure see the chiefs and nations united in cabar, and that I would then declare my sentiments in public. In the mean time, I requested them to remain convinced of my friendship for them, my zeal for their interests, and my readiness to make any sacrifice for the good of the nation.

My answer was satisfactory to them, and they all prostrated themselves before they quitted me; a mark of submission which no chief had hitherto shewn. After their departure, I examined Mr. Mayeur respecting the causes which had produced this revolution among the chiefs; but he excused himself, and said that several of my officers knew more of the business than himself. During my conversation with the Sieur Mayeur, I perceived three officers, who came at the head of fifty men, and declared, that having learned what steps had been taken at the isle of France, they had all determined to give up their lives, rather than see me quit the island; that with regard to themselves, as they were connected with the natives, they had determined to fix their abode on the island, and therefore requested that I would no longer consider them as soldiers, but as men devoted to my interests. This direct proceeding on the part of officers of distinction, embarrassed me still more. It was in vain that I desired them to reflect on what they were about; and observed, that I could not but blame them for persisting in a resolution of such delicacy:

delicacy: for they replied, that as they had taken the step, they could not now go back; that, being connected with the interests of the chiefs, and particularly attached to me, they would carry their design into execution, whether I approved it or not. On this occasion they repeated the conduct of the minister against me; insisted upon the intrigues and cabals which the Government of the isle of France had employed, to induce the natives to cut us off; and they concluded, that what had passed was sufficient to justify their conduct. The manner in which all this was said, left me no hope of dissuading them. I therefore directed my discourse principally to induce them to remain steady in their duty, and promised to get their discharges, in order that they might attach themselves to the country, without having any cause to reproach themselves. One of the officers informed me, that I should not find ten soldiers who would quit Madagascar; and that even among the officers, there were not above two or three who were not of their mind. This information convinced me that the connivance of the troops with the chiefs, arose from the habitude they had contracted of living with the natives of the country, during the preceding campaign, against the Seclaves.

After the departure of the troops, I employed myself in forming a plan to appease these people, and to take the best advantage of the favourable disposition which the natives of the country had shewn towards me. This plan naturally led me to that of civilizing the Madagascar nations. Towards the evening I gave orders for covering the floor of the hall of cabar, and to make every preparation for celebrating a festival at the breaking up of the meeting.

On the 17th, in the morning, twenty-one guns were fired from the fort, without displaying the standard;

standard; but on the great flag-staff before my house a blue flag was displayed, agreeably to my orders. I gave directions that all the troops should remain in the fort. At seven, a detachment of six hundred blacks arrived, and formed a square about the hall. At nine, the chiefs quitted the camp, with all their people, to come to the cabar. On their arrival upon the parade, they sent twelve chiefs to me, with the same number of standards, to conduct me. As I was ready, I followed them; but before I entered the cabar, I went to the chiefs, to thank them for their politeness and attention. Sixty-two chiefs were seated in cabar, and their attendants remained under arms, in order. The first chief who spoke, was Manonganon, to the following effect:

“ We, the princes and captains, who are assembled, and represent the whole nation, being determined by the rights of thy birth, by thy wisdom, and by thy affection for us, do declare at this instant, that we acknowledge thee for our Ampanfacabe, and intreat thee to accept this title and rank, with the assurance of finding fidelity, affection, and constancy in our hearts.

“ Answer us.”

I then arose, and replied, that the same zeal which the whole nation had acknowledged me to possess for their welfare, induced me to accept their offer, in the hope that the princes, chiefs, and captains of the nation, would always assist me in the great enterprize of civilization.

I then explained to them the advantages which they, and more especially their children, would derive from the establishment of a solid government. I addressed myself to their passions, by displaying that immortality with which their names would

would be transmitted to posterity, in consequence of their having established wise and humane laws; and enlarged on that glory which the Madagascar nation would possess in future times. But that which affected them most strongly, was the display of advantages which a well-directed commerce, supported by an effectual cultivation of their lands, could not but procure in a very short time. In fact, this part of my speech, relating to a subject which was best known by the people of Madagascar, was naturally the best calculated to produce the most effect upon their minds.

As soon as I had finished my harangue, the chiefs deputed a captain to announce my nomination to the people; immediately after which the discharges of musquetry began and continued near a quarter of an hour. As soon as tranquility was restored, a second chief, named Sancé, spoke, and informed me that his nation required me to quit the service of the King of France, and to cause all those to quit the same service who were desirous of fixing their residence at Madagascar. And lastly, that I would declare what province I chose for the place of my residence, in order that they might build a town. When I perceived that he spoke no more, I replied, that it was my intention to quit the service of France, and to cause all those who were desirous of remaining at Madagascar likewise to quit it; but that I could not carry this design into execution before the arrival of his Majesty's commissaries; for which reason, I requested the cabar to defer the performances of the oath, because, as I was hitherto engaged in the service of the King, I was not yet master of my actions. With regard to the town in question, I expressed my opinion, that it would be most convenient to fix it in the centre of the island, that I might be as near as possible to each province: and  
in

in order to render them better acquainted with my intentions, I declared to them, that having accepted the charge of Ampanfacabe, my first duty would be to establish good laws, to maintain peace and tranquillity throughout the land, and to defend the country from foreign invasions; after which, my attention would be directed to the establishment of commerce in the most flourishing state, by increasing cultivation; but that all these things could not be done simply by my will alone, but that I depended upon the assistance of the chiefs of the nation, some of whom would be nominated to the council, others to governments, others to the departments of war, the marine, &c.

This discourse led the chiefs to propose a variety of questions and it required much conversation to make them comprehend the true sense of what I said. I succeeded at last in this, and several of them prostrated themselves, and thanked me for having inspired them, with the disposition to form a resolution of nominating me their Ampanfacabe.

The third chief who spoke, was Diamandris. He observed, that the French would be angry with me for quitting them, and that consequently a war might be expected on their part; on which business he requested my opinion.

My reply was, that the King of France had a power over me during the whole time I should continue in his service; but the moment I should quit his service, I should be my own master. I admitted the truth, that the French might probably become jealous, when they saw the island of Madagascar formed into a solid government; but that I should be sorry for them if they should adopt the plan of acting by force against a whole nation. I observed likewise, that in a case of this nature,

nature, I had a plan to propose in due time, which would secure a solid friendship between the French and the Madagascar nations. Here the chief Raffangour interrupted me, by observing, that the French could never be good friends with the Madagascar nation, as they must constantly recollect several massacres of their nation on this island.

Raffangour ended the cabra, by proposing, that an oath should be mutually entered into only between me and the chiefs, with the declaration that it should be publicly repeated as soon as I should quit the service of France. This oath was immediately made; and in order to render it more sacred, it was confirmed by the oath of blood. This oath is performed by opening the skin of the left breast with a razor, and each of the assistants sucks a drop of the blood of him who is received as chief; at which ceremony maledictions and imprecations are pronounced against him who shall fail in his engagement.

After the oath, the chiefs commissioned the chief Sancé to command their troops, and to be watchful that, on the arrival of the King's commissaries, no attempts should be made against my person. Before the cabar broke up, the chief Sancé went out, doubtless for the purpose of informing the troops and people how to behave. He sent word by one of his captains, that all was ready; whereupon we went forth. At my coming forth, the troops lowered their colours, and the Madagascar soldiers, having their musquets pointing downwards, laid their left hands on their breasts, in sign of engagement, or oath. As I understood that there were near eleven thousand men assembled in cabar, I ordered twenty oxen to be killed, and gave them twelve casks of brandy. With respect to the chiefs, I entertained them alone. The troops having at  
last

last received permission to come out of the fort, followed their officers, to compliment me upon the performance of what they called an agreement of union and harmony between the establishment and the chiefs of the country.

The Sieur D'Ecole, my second interpreter, observed to me, that all those of the troops who had blue ribbons on their white cockades had determined to fix their residence at Madagascar. The rest of the day was employed in rejoicing. Towards the evening, near twelve hundred women and girls presented themselves upon the parade, in compliment to me, where they afterwards amused themselves by dancing. I presented them all with handkerchiefs, ribbons, and brandy with sugar.

On the 18th I convened the chiefs, and proposed to them to return into their respective provinces, to their families, except six, whom I was desirous of having near me, to assist in quality of counsellors. The chief Sancé, who was to remain, encamped with three thousand men, subject to my orders. This precaution appeared to me to be more particularly necessary, as a merchant, who came from Foul Point, and arrived at this port, had assured me, that it was published in the isle of France, that orders had been given for arresting me, and sending me home to be judged criminally.

Between the 19th and 22d, my time was continually employed in taking leave of the chiefs, who agreed that they would assemble the moment they should perceive fires lighted at Mangabey. Every chief engaged to forward the execution of this signal, by lighting several fires on the coast, or upon the mountain.

On the 23d, I at length arrived at that tranquillity I had so much desired since my settling on the island.

island. I saw the whole east coast perfectly united to the establishment, and the western coast ready to join in the same common interest. The cultivation of the country being every where doubled, afforded a promise of real advantage; and nothing was wanting but a more ample supply from home, in order to take advantage of the happy situation of affairs. But, unfortunately, the most proper time for establishing the colonists was suffered to elapse, and I saw myself, with grief, reduced to the simple movements of an Automaton. I had, besides, every reason to be apprehensive of the consequences of the prejudices excited against me; for I could attribute the retardation of the supplies only to the false reports which the administration of the isle of France had forwarded to the Court, respecting the establishment at Madagascar; and I had reason to fear that the ministry, being prejudiced by the reports, might defer the supplies, for no other purpose than that of ruining me. I likewise saw the principles upon which I had founded the settlement at Madagascar reduced naturally, by the want of force, to a crisis, which led the natives to a knowledge of their own strength, and to form a government amongst themselves, which, when once established, would no longer permit them to suffer a foreign force to reside amongst them. The first step towards this resolution being made, if the minister has executed the plan which was announced to me, France cannot fail of seeing herself deprived of all the advantages which were acquired by commerce and friendship with the natives of the country.

On the 27th, a private vessel, the St. Vincent, commanded by the Sieur Blanchard, arrived from the isle of France, laden with articles of trade from India, which were well calculated for the trade of barter for rice. I therefore directed the  
store-keeper

store-keeper to purchase his cargo, for the use of the establishment. I could not dispense with this proceeding, because I durst not give up trading with the natives; because the consequences would undoubtedly have been a neglect of the cultivation of the country, if the regular trade had been interrupted.

On the 10th, the ship *Defire* entered the harbour, with the news that Messrs. Bellecombe and Chevreau had already arrived at the isle of France, on board his Majesty's frigate the *Consolante*, and that these gentlemen had orders to repair, without delay, to Madagascar. This unexpected circumstance convinced me, that the minister had determined to send these gentlemen in quality of commissaries, to secure my person, in order to pursue violent measures for the reduction of the islanders by force. My suspicions were at last justified; for I received a letter from a friend, containing information that these inspectors had orders to bring me to Europe, in case they could be assured that such a proceeding, on the part of Government, towards me, would not excite the natives of the island to drive all the French out of their country. The dependance I placed on the attachment of the natives, set me entirely at ease in this respect; but I was strongly affected with indignation at the decision of the minister, and determined to resign my charge, in order that I might have it in my power to serve my friends more effectually.

On the 20th, the chiefs of the country having received information of the arrival of the new orders from the Court, and observing some consternation among my people, waited upon me to enquire whether I had received orders for my departure, and how such orders could be reconciled with the promise I had made, that I would never abandon them. These reproaches were followed

ed

ed by lamentations, which affected me very sensibly, because I was convinced they arose from real attachment. I used every exertion to render them easy, by observing, that the movements they had taken notice of among the white men, were only made as preparations for the honourable reception of a General officer, who came from his Majesty to enquire into the state of the settlement, and to assure them of his powerful protection. This answer removed their apprehensions in some measure, but did not entirely destroy them.

On the 21st, a signal was made on the mountain, that a three-masted vessel was in sight. Soon after I saw her myself, and knew her to be the *Consolante*. In the evening she anchored off the *isle Aiguillon*; and two hours after I received a letter from Messrs. Bellecombe and Chevreau, jointly, informing me of their quality as commissaries on the part of the King, and inspectors in their several departments. This letter was accompanied with an order, in the King's name, for me to come on board. As I had been forewarned of the instructions which these commissaries had received, I did not think proper to go on board, but answered that I was ready, conformably to the orders of his Majesty, to put the command of the settlement into their hands, that they might proceed to act according to their instructions; but that, until I had made an act of resignation, I neither could, nor ought to leave the shore. Together with my answer I sent a particular letter to Mr. Bellecombe, whom I intreated to come on shore without fear, and without landing his troops; and at the same time I solemnly promised to conform to every request I could honourably comply with. Upon receiving this answer, he replied, that he would come on shore, to inspire me with every confidence, by surrendering himself up to my politeness and delicacy. At the end of his letter, he insinuated, that if he had  
thought

thought proper to give credit to all that he had heard, he should not have taken this step; but that, as a military man, he would depend on my word of honour.

On the 22d, Messrs. De Bellecombe, marshal des camps, and Chevreau, commissary general of stores, came on shore. I received them conformably to his Majesty's orders, specified in the letter of the minister, and immediately afterwards I presented my troop to Mr. De Bellecombe, acknowledging him, at the head of the troops, as inspector. In the evening of the same day, the commissaries put into my hands a paper, containing twenty-five articles of questions and demands relative to their mission, to which they demanded my answers to each severally. The rest of the day was employed in conversation respecting the different parts of the establishment.

On the 23d, I presented my answers, likewise reduced into twenty-five articles, to the gentlemen commissioners. This piece, marked *L. X. A.* is annexed to the present Memoir. The rest of the day was employed in visiting the fort, the public buildings, and the hospital; and, in the mean time, Mr. Chevreau was busied in examining the accounts, together with those who had charge of the administration.

On the 24th, I gave an ample account of every thing relating to the military service.

On the 25th, the chiefs of the country, to whom I had sent an invitation to assemble at the settlement, conformably to the intention of the commissaries, demanded some days to collect those who resided at a distance. The commissaries, in order to save time, made an excursion with me to visit the two posts, Fort St. John, and Fort Augustus at the plain. The fear of contracting the disorders of the country occasioned them to hasten their return.

On

On the 26th, after our return to Louisbourg, they held a cabar, or assembly, with the chiefs, at which I declined being present, in order that the natives of the country might be at liberty to speak their minds. The result of this meeting is likewise annexed to the present Memoir.

On the 27th, the commissaries, after having given me a discharge respecting my past conduct, and accounts, and a certificate for the sum of four hundred and fifteen thousand livres which I had advanced to the treasury, prepared to go on board. I believe their departure was hastened by the fear of disorders, which they had been informed, at the isle of France, were very common at Madagascar. This circumstance probably disgusted them with our residence on shore, and might cause their reports, though very well written, to be less favourable than otherwise they might have been.

On the 28th, I delivered to Mr. Bellecombe my act of resignation, and surrendered the command of the troops to Mr. De Sanglier.

On the 29th, Mr. Bellecombe retired on board, and sent me an order in the King's name to confine my operations to the preservation of the chief settlement, until I should receive further instructions from Court; to put a stop to all the works whatever; to continue the prohibition of trading with the blacks, and lastly, permitting me to absent myself from Madagascar. But as I did not think proper to receive charge of any orders, because I had resigned my office, I forwarded this order to Mr. De Sanglier, and declared to the inspectors, that being determined from thenceforth to take charge of nothing relative to the establishment, I could no otherwise forward the new intentions of Government than by the good offices I might render them with the natives of the country. Upon this declaration the inspectors addressed to me a  
requisition,

requisition, that I would promote the advantage of the establishment; but they at the same time declared, that as they could not accept my dismissal, I was bound to perform the duties of my office until the arrival of precise orders from his Majesty, which would not fail to arrive upon their report. After these proceedings I saw no more of the commissaries, who departed for Foul Point, where I am unacquainted with their proceedings. For my part, I retired immediately into one of my habitations, where I was visited by several Rohandrians and Woadziri chiefs, who having been informed that I had quitted the service of the king of France, required me to enter into the oath of Ampanfacabe; for which reason they gave orders for a general meeting of the nation, on the 12th of the next month.

On the third day after my retreat, several of the officers came to beg I would assist them with my advice; and the troops sent deputies to me to declare, that if I did not resume the command over them, they were determined to leave the fort, and declare themselves independent. Mr. De Sanglier, the commander, likewise urged the same request very strongly, and assured me, that the troops would infallibly revolt, in case of my refusal; and the natives would, of course, ruin the posts already established. These representations, and the imminent danger of the settlement, determined me at last to resume the command, at the same time that I made a declaration, that I was actuated to this proceeding by a wish to preserve the Europeans, and to keep up the connection of friendship and commerce; but that this resumption should not be considered as a renewal of any obligation on my part, as I considered myself as entirely out of the service of France.

Such was the consequence of the precipitation with which the minister acted. My conduct has since proved, that all my actions arose from the most perfect delicacy, and that I did not, in any respect, depart from the attachment due to France; and if I refused to assist in such steps as Government was desirous of taking, to the violation of those treaties of alliance and commerce which I had stipulated with the Madagascar nation, I only did my duty. And certain it is, that I was desirous of serving the French by this conduct, for I was well convinced from the knowledge I had acquired respecting the characters and manners of the people, that every attempt by force against the liberty of that nation, would be pernicious to the establishment and general interests of the nation. Future times will prove, that Madagascar can never be subdued by force, and that mildness and equity alone can lead this nation to a civilized state, which, when once established, cannot fail of procuring immense fortune and prosperity to its allies. But, alas! after what has passed, I have no reason to hope that the minister will change his system, though I am determined to use every effort to persuade him to do so.

October the 1st, 1776. Being desirous of placing the establishment in a situation to maintain itself, until the arrival of new orders from Court, I returned to Louisbourg, where having assembled the troops, I declared, that I resumed the command merely with a view to provide for the subsistence of the establishment, to which business I should afterwards attend jointly with Mr. Coque-reau, the principal store-keeper. And in order that my regulations might be duly performed, I assembled a committee, composed of the principal store-keeper, two captains, and a sub-commiffary of the marines, in which we regulated the provisions

visions for the subsistence and continuation of trade, as well as the conduct we should in future adopt with respect to the natives. With regard to the military service, few alterations were necessary, because I had always attended closely to that department.

The 2d and 3d were employed in writing out instructions for the respective individuals.

On the 4th, an assembly of the chiefs of the Sambarives, Saphirobai, Antavoeny, Antivohibey, Antimaroa, Antambour, Antimokol, Antimananhar, Safeibrahim, and Saferahimina, was held, in which I declared, that having quitted the service of the King of France, I thought it proper to inform his Majesty, by his ministers, respecting the position of the establishment, in order that I might have no cause to reproach myself for the consequences, in case the French minister should persist in his intention of subjugating the inhabitants of Madagascar by force; for which reason I requested them all to confess, sincerely, whether they were desirous of the continuation of the establishment, or its recall; and I promised, upon oath, to transmit their decision, word for word, to the King of France. Upon this proposal, the chiefs held a consultation of near an hour, and afterwards, having resumed their places, answered as follows:

“ Wise and prudent as thou art, can’st thou  
 “ doubt our attachment towards thee? Hast thou  
 “ not seen with what ardour we have fought  
 “ against our brothers, when they had rebelled,  
 “ in order to bring them to their duty? Whence,  
 “ therefore, is it that thou shewest so much distrust  
 “ towards a people that is attached to thee? If thy  
 “ heart tells thee that thou wishest well to the  
 “ French, say, and write to their King, that we  
 “ offer him our hearts and our friendship. But  
 “ we wish to live under thy command. Thou art  
 “ our father and our Lord. Let the French love

“ thee as we do, and our arms shall be united to  
“ theirs; our colours shall be united with those of  
“ the white men, and we will fight valiantly against  
“ the common enemy: but if thou must suffer the  
“ hatred of the French, we will never acknowledge  
“ them as our brethren, but their enemies shall be  
“ our friends. These are our thoughts, and the  
“ words of our hearts. Promise, therefore, be-  
“ fore that God, whom we all adore, to write  
“ them to the King of the French, and engage  
“ that thou wilt be more attached to us than to the  
“ French nation, and wilt never desert us.”

Being assured of this unanimous reply, I made preparations for the cabar and oath, and engaged to inform the King of France of the thoughts of the Madagascar people, and to live with them in future. The chiefs, on their side, engaged to obey my orders exactly, and to live in good harmony with the establishment.

After the ceremony was ended, I gave an entertainment to the natives, at which all the Europeans were present. This series of events preceding a revolution, which fixes the epoch of the civilization of Madagascar, led me to make many reflections. I knew, by experience, how little I could depend on the propriety of the decisions of the Cabinet of Versailles. My firmness alone was left to me to bear up against the apprehensions of the political artifices which France would employ against me, to calumniate and destroy my reputation. But being assured of my loyalty, I determined, after having fixed my system of conduct amongst the chiefs and people of Madagascar, to return into France, in order to present in person an account of the interests of the settlement, and to combat the prejudices of the minister. I was well aware of the risk I ran; but at length the care of my reputation, and my affection for the people who had

had adopted me, led me to this resolution. I determined, therefore, that as France could not charge me with rebellion, and could only blame her ministers for their ignorance of her real interests, I would employ my fortune, my credit, and even the interest of Madagascar, to procure friends to that island, and bring the great work of civilization to a happy conclusion. This is my resolution, and I will adhere to it as long as I live.

On the 5th, I received from the different chiefs considerable presents, in slaves, cattle, and rice, which I distributed to the troops. This day, having convoked all the people of the establishment, I declared to them, that having secured their tranquillity with the natives of the country, and provided for their subsistence until they could receive orders from Court, I should now quit them, and would no longer retain any command. Their tears were an unequivocal answer, and I heard but one exclamation, "No, we will not lose our father!"

On the 6th, the interpreter announced that six deputed chiefs had arrived with a considerable number of armed men. Upon receiving them, they informed me that the great day of the oath approached, and that the chiefs and people in assembly, desired that I would meet them, for which purpose they had detached the troops for my safeguard and service. To conform, therefore, to their desires, I quitted my French dress, and assumed that of an Indian; after which I set out. It was necessary for me to pass through a long row of natives of the country, who shouted, and invoked Zahanhar. My friends, the officers of my troop, and the whole people of the establishment, followed me. As soon as I had arrived at the camp, I was received by all the chiefs, and conducted to the tent which was designed for me, with six others  
for

for my domestics. I caused six four-pounders to be brought into my camp, which were placed before my tent, and a daily appointment of two hundred men was ordered for my guard.

On the 7th, 8th, and 9th, I was employed in drawing out my proposals to the assembly, for the establishment of a permanent Government. The 10th at last arrived, and I was awakened by a triple discharge of cannon. At six in the morning the chief Raffangour, with six others, all cloathed in white, presented themselves at my feet, and requested to speak with me. I received them without my tent, being likewise cloathed in white. The discourse of Raffangour expressed the testimonies of confidence with which the Madagascar nation had intrusted me with the supreme power, and the advantages they hoped to attain from my knowledge and services. After his speech, he begged me to follow him; and we went out of the camp into the plain, where we entered into a circle formed by an assembly of thirty thousand armed men. The chiefs being each at the head of the people of their own nation, and the women without the circle, the chiefs immediately formed the first circle round us, and Raffangour harangued them to the following effect:

“ Blessed be Zahanhar, who has returned to his  
“ people. Blessed be the blood of Zafferamini, to  
“ whom our attachment is due. Blessed be the law  
“ of our fathers, which commands us to obey a  
“ chief descended from the blood of Ramini. Our  
“ fathers and ourselves, have experienced, that  
“ disunion is the punishment of God. Since the  
“ long time we have been deprived of a chief of  
“ the sacred race of Ramini, we have lived like  
“ wild beasts; sometimes killing our brethren, and  
“ at other times perishing by their violence. En-  
“ feebled

“ feebled by our difunion, we have always been  
“ the prey of the ftrongeft. We have been wicked,  
“ without being defirous to liften to the voice of  
“ juftice and equity. Yes, we have in our own  
“ times beheld the wretched descendants of thofe  
“ who spilled the blood of Ramini, call in the  
“ French to affift them in oppreffing and deftroy-  
“ ing their brethren. We know how Zahanhar has  
“ punifhed them, by permitting one of their  
“ flaves, fupported by the French, to spill their  
“ blood, in expiation of their crimes. You all  
“ underftand me; but I have thought proper to  
“ bring thefe facts to your recollection, in or-  
“ der that you might take the union of hearts for  
“ your law. To preferve this, you must follow  
“ the law of your fathers, which commands you  
“ to fubmit to the descendant of Ramini—I here  
“ prefent him to you; I give him this fagaie, that  
“ he may be the only Ombiaffobe, as was our fa-  
“ ther Ramini. Attend to my voice, ye Rohan-  
“ drians, Anacandrians, Voadziri, Lohavobites,  
“ Philoubey, Ondzatfi, Ombiaffes, Ampouria. It  
“ is the law of the blood of our fathers. Ac-  
“ knowledge the Ampanfacabe; fubmit to him,  
“ liften to his voice, follow the laws which he  
“ fhall give, and you fhall be happy. Alas! my  
“ old age does not permit me to fhare your happi-  
“ nefs, my friends, and my fpirit fhall not per-  
“ ceive the testimonies of that gratitude, which  
“ you may fhew to my tomb.” He then turned  
to me, and proceeded—“ And thou, worthy fon  
“ of the blood of Ramini, implore the affiftance  
“ of God, who enlightens thee with his fpirit.  
“ Be juft; love thy people as thy children; let  
“ their happinefs be thine, and be not a ftranger  
“ to their wants and misfortunes. Govern and  
“ affift with thy councils the Rohandrians and  
“ Anacandrians; protect the Voadziri, watch  
“ with

“ with paternal care over the Lohavohites and  
 “ Philoubey; employ, for the general good, the  
 “ Ondzatsi and Ombiaffes; and do not despise  
 “ the Ampouria; cause them to consider their  
 “ masters as their fathers, as it was in the time of  
 “ our father Ramini.”

Having finished this discourse, he put the sargaie into my hands, and prostrated himself before me, as did likewise his companions, and all the chiefs that were assembled together; and at last I saw upwards of fifty thousand men prostrated before me. Raffangour requested me to make a public answer, which he repeated in these words—“ Veloun Raminiha, Veloun Ouloun malacassa, Veloun Rohandriani, Anacandriani, Voadziri, Lohavohites, Philoubey, Ondzatsi, Ombiaffes, Ampouria, Veloun, Veloun Zaffé Aminiha, Mitomba Zahanhar :”—which implies, Long live the blood of Ramini, Long live the Madagascar nation, Long live the Rohandrians, &c. Long live the blood of our fathers, and may the God who created the heavens and the earth long preserve us all. The people gave repeated shouts whenever I named any class; and at last arose; and when every one was standing, I continued my speech, by saying, that I acknowledged the favour of Heaven, which had brought me again to the land of my fathers; that I should employ my whole life in attending to what the spirit of God should inspire me to do, that every individual of the Madagascar nation might consider me as a father. I then intreated the Rohandrians, and the other chiefs, to the Voadziri inclusive, to assist me with their counsels. I engaged the Lohavohites faithfully to execute the orders they should receive; and I assured the Ampouria, that the laws would abate the inconveniences of their unhappy state of slavery. I promised the Ondzatsi and Ombiaffes to employ them  
 in

in the welfare of the nation; and I concluded my discourse by declaring that I considered it as my duty to devote all my time to the establishment of a form of Government, in order that union and harmony might be preserved. I was continuing my harangue, when Raffangour begged me to stop. The orders then separated from each other, the Rohandrians assembling together, and Anacandrians likewise apart, as did all the others. I was first led to the Rohandrians, where I found an ox, whose throat I cut, at the same time pronouncing the oath of sacrifice, and every Rohandrian took a drop of the blood, which he swallowed, repeating, with a loud voice, imprecations against himself and his children, in case he should fail in the obedience he had sworn to me. I was then conducted to the circle of the Anacandrians, where I killed two oxen, and the same oath was repeated. In this manner I passed through all the classes of the people, where I killed three oxen for the Voadziri, four with the Lohavohites, six with the Ondzatsi, two with the Ombiaffes, and twelve with the Ampouria. These last dipped the ends of their sargaies in the blood, and licked them, at the same time pronouncing the oath. This whole ceremony passed without the least confusion; and I was again conducted to the circle of the Rohandrians, who made a second oath with me, which was performed in this manner:—each person made an incision, with a razor, under the left breast, as I did likewise myself, and each mutually sucked the blood of each other, at the same time pronouncing the maledictions against whoever should violate his oath, and benedictions in favour of those who should continue faithful to their engagement. All this ceremony was ended in the course of two hours. After noon the chiefs announced to their people

people a moment of recollection, to invoke the spirit of God, and to thank Zahanhar for his goodness and protection.

At a quarter past two the Rohandrians conducted me to my tent, where I detained them to dinner. I invited the Anacandrians and Voadziri to drink after dinner, and sent four casks of brandy to the Lohavohites, to be distributed among the Ondzatzi, Ombiaffes, and Ampouria.

About six in the evening, near three hundred women, natives of the country, appeared, and requested to make an oath with my spouse. The ceremony was performed by moon-light, and their oath was made by dancing. The purport of it was, that they would obey the orders of my spouse, and would appeal to her in all the disputes and quarrels, in which it was not proper for men to meddle. This oath being finished, their rejoicings began, and the night passed in dances and songs.

On the 11th, I requested all the chiefs to assemble, to hold their first cabar. At eight, the assembly being full, I required the execution of an act of engagement, under oath, to be made with the insertion of all the names of the chiefs and people present. This act was written in the language of the country, with Roman letters, and was as follows:

“ This act of oath of the Kings Rohandrian, of  
 “ the Princes Voadziri, of the chiefs Lohavohites,  
 “ and the people of Madagascar, made the 10th  
 “ of October, 1776, appointing and confirming  
 “ the election of Maurice Augustus Count of Benyowsky, to the rank of Ampanfacabe, or supreme chief of the nation, the Kings, Princes, chiefs, and people undersigned, being assembled  
 “ in cabar :

“ In presence of our people, having consumed  
 “ the sacrifice, and made the oath of blood, we  
 “ proclaim,

“ proclaim, declare, and acknowledge Mauritius  
 “ Augustus for our supreme chief Ampanfacabe,  
 “ titles extinct since the decease of our holy fami-  
 “ ly of Ramini, which we revive in him and his  
 “ family. It is for this reason that, having con-  
 “ sumed the sacrifice, we submit inviolably to his  
 “ authority; in consequence of which we deter-  
 “ mine to erect, in our province of Mahavelou,  
 “ a monument to perpetuate the memory of our  
 “ union, and to immortalize our holy oath: In  
 “ order that our infants, and their children, unto  
 “ the most remote posterity, may be obedient to  
 “ the sacred family Ombiaffe of the Ampanfacabe,  
 “ whom we all sanctify by our submissions.—  
 “ Cursed be our children who shall not obey our  
 “ present will; cursed be their inheritances, and  
 “ the fruits of the earth on which they shall sub-  
 “ sist:—may the most horrid slavery confound  
 “ them.”

HIAMI, King of the East.

LAMBOUIN, King of the North.

RAFFANGOUR, Rohandrian of the Sambarives.

A LIST OF THE GREAT MEN, OR CHIEFS, AND THE  
 PEOPLE AT THIS CABIR.

Raffangour Rohandrian—Cievi Voadziri,  
 Of the province of Zaferamini, with their people.

Sianique Rohandrian—Mandingue Anacandrian,  
 Of the province of Zaphirobay, with their people.

Raoul Anacandrian—Diamanong Voadziri,  
 Of the province of Antambour, with their people.

Manongamon

Manongamon Rohandrian---Mamon Anacandrian,  
Of the province of Antivoiefou, with their people.

Manacandrin Anacandrian---Diamandriſs Lo-  
havohits, of the province of Antifapherobay, with  
their people.

Raffenou Anacandrian---Leloatou Anacandrian,  
Of the province of Antivohibey, with their people.

Sancé Rohandrian Malata---Damo-Anacandrian,  
Of the province of Sambarives, with their people.

Lambaranthe Rohandrian---Francé Anacandrian,  
Of the province of Antſirac, with their people.

Hiavi Rohandrianabé,  
King, with his troop of Ondzatſi.

Lamboiun Rohandrianabé,  
King of the North, with his troop.

Ramaraombe Rohandrian---Diamboulmaſſe Ana-  
candrian, of the province of Maſſouala, with their  
troops.

Raffidzimon Anacandrian---Diafaitsche Lohavo-  
hits, of the province of Antavacayr, with their  
people.

Dianbandze Anacandrian---Siomba Lohavohits,  
Of the province of Rantabay, with their people.

Romain Lohavohites---Mamay Lohavohits,  
Of the province ſubjected to Hiavi, with the Ond-  
zatſi.

Diane Sara Rohandrian---Ravoye Lohavohits,  
Of the province of Manoarou, with their people.

Mumere Bohandrian---Ravoye Lohavohits,  
Of the province of Mananzari, with their people.

Ravouſow

Ravoufow Anacandrian---Belaze Lohavohits,  
Of the province of Mahafali. with their people.

Diane Souloat Rohandrian---Fanhamenon Ana-  
candrian, of the province of Matanany, with their  
people.

I employed the rest of the day in conferring with  
the chiefs, in order to persuade them to adopt a  
constitution, which I had determined to propose  
the following day, the hour of meeting being fixed  
at ten.

This day likewise was employed in festivals and  
rejoicing; and nothing passed of any importance,  
except the delivery of a petition, signed by thirty-  
eight soldiers, five subaltern officers, and six per-  
sons employed in civil affairs. They entreated  
that I would grant them my protection, which I  
could not refuse. They had previously secured an  
assurance of protection from the greater part of  
the Rohandrians. Towards the evening I received  
advice of the arrival of two private vessels upon  
the coast, and I immediately sent an interpreter to  
purchase the said vessels and their cargoes.

On the 12th, the chiefs of the province of Ran-  
tabay presented the Europeans who formerly be-  
longed to the settlement, and requested me to re-  
ceive them under my protection, and permit them  
to settle amongst us. I consented to this, and their  
oath was received in cabar. At ten, the meeting  
being full, I opened the business, by a motion for  
the establishment of a form of government and  
constitution. My proposal was to the following  
effect:

“ In consequence of my election to the office of  
“ Ampanfacabe, I find myself charged with a pro-  
“ digious weight. When I considered the duties  
“ annexed to my office, by accepting this charge,  
“ I foresaw

“ I forefaw that the general good of the nation  
“ must be my first aim. To attain this, I am con-  
“ vinced that the power ought to be lodged in the  
“ hands of a supreme Council, composed of members  
“ of known wisdom, prudence, and activity. Let  
“ this Council exercise all the acts of sovereignty,  
“ and possess the sole right, with the consent of  
“ the Ampanfacabe, of convening the general as-  
“ sembly of the nation. In order that they may  
“ adopt and agree to the constitution, when it shall  
“ be drawn out, or whenever it shall be required,  
“ to administer the oath of fidelity to the Ampan-  
“ facabe. From among the members of the su-  
“ preme Council, who shall always be taken out of  
“ the rank of Rohandrians and Anacandrians,  
“ whether Indians or Europeans, nomination shall  
“ be made to the places of governors of provin-  
“ ces, as well as to the offices of ministers of State,  
“ whether in the departments of war, marine, fi-  
“ nance or trade, justice or agriculture. And as  
“ it is likewise necessary to watch with the great-  
“ est exactness to the execution of all the orders  
“ and resolutions appointed by the supreme Coun-  
“ cil, the Ampanfacabe, with the advice of the  
“ Council, shall establish a permanent Council,  
“ composed of one or two Rohandrians, and all  
“ the rest of the Voadziri and Lohavohites. Let  
“ there be provincial Councils likewise, whose  
“ members shall consist of a Rohandrian gover-  
“ nor, five Anacandrians, two Voadziri, four Lo-  
“ havohites, and the rest of the Ondzatsi and Om-  
“ biasses. The business of the supreme Council  
“ will be constantly to prevent all dissentions,  
“ which might arise from misunderstandings be-  
“ tween the Rohandrians, or between the several  
“ provinces; it will be incumbent on them to use only  
“ the ways of justice. They must watch, lest fo-  
“ reign armies should make attempts against the  
“ liberty

“ liberty of the Madagascar nation, by forming  
“ establishments on shore. Their constant endea-  
“ vour must be, to render industry and trade  
“ flourishing ; and, in a word, their utmost exer-  
“ tions must be directed to secure the most perfect  
“ prosperity to the community.”

I concluded my discourse, by assuring the cabar, that with the aid and assistance of God, I hoped to see, in a short time, happiness, riches, and prosperity, return to the nation ; and, by means of due order and form of government, established on good principles, I hoped that the island would be for ever freed from discord, the scourge of war, and the unhappy state of slavery.

As soon as I had ceased to speak, all those who were present cried out, “ Velou Ampanfacabe, velou Ramini ;” which implies, Long live our lord, long live the descendant of Ramini. The chief Raffangour begged that I would permit him to announce my discourse to the people ; and he went out for this purpose, and returned in the space of an hour, with all the people. On his return into the cabar, he assured all the chiefs, that the nation entrusted all their rights to the assembly, the individuals of which gave me full authority to form a supreme Council, and to do every thing I thought proper for their common welfare. I therefore proceeded to nominate to the charges of the supreme Council, the number of which was fixed at thirty-two persons.

Four Europeans were immediately nominated, and eight natives of the country whose names were as follow :

Raffangour Rohandrian,  
Sianique Rohandrian,  
Raoul Anacandrian,  
Manongamanon Rohandrian,

Raffenou

Raffenou Anacandrian,  
 Sancè Rohandrian, a Mulatto,  
 Hiavi Rohandrian,  
 Lambouin Rohandrian.

The two last mentioned Rohandrians solemnly renounced all pretensions to supremacy.

The nomination of the twenty other members was deferred, in order to afford employ for such Europeans as might hereafter arrive, and those natives of the country who might be found to possess abilities.

After this nomination, which was universally approved by shouts of joy, I proceeded to that of the permanent Council, which was confined to eighteen individuals.

Two Europeans were immediately nominated, and six natives of the country, whose names were as follow :

Ramazaombe Rohandrian,  
 Rafidzimon Anacandrian,  
 Diamanong Voadziri,  
 Zievi Voadziri,  
 Diamandriffe Lohavohits,  
 Diafaiche Lohavohits.

This nomination was likewise applauded ; and the nomination of the ten other members was deferred, for the same reason as was mentioned respecting the supreme Council.

Being satisfied with the business of the day, having established these two pillars which were to support the burthen of the constitution, I adjourned the cabar till the following day, at eight o'clock. This day I received a demand from the settlement, to furnish a cargo of rice for the isle of France ; but the commander at Louisbourg informed me that the storehouses were empty, and unprovided with any articles of trade, and that it would be impossible for him to extricate himself without  
 my

my assistance. In consequence of this representation, and to shew how much I had the good of the settlement at heart, I requested the Saphirobai chiefs to open a trade for bills, of which I formed a model, and sent a sufficient number to the commander of the settlement.

In the night of this day I received advice, that the King of the Seclaves had sent presents and envoys towards me, to conclude the peace. I dispatched a Rohandrian to meet them.

On the 13th, the Council being assembled, I proposed to determine upon a place for the erection of a town: the place appointed was at the head of the river Manangouzon. It was likewise proposed to erect six governments, from the harbour of Moroava to the point of Itapere. But as I was in want of people capable of fulfilling these charges, I deferred the execution of the act of Council. This circumstance afforded me an occasion to represent to the members of the Council, that it would be of the greatest advantage for the interests of the nation, to form treaties of commerce and friendship with the King of France, or some other European power, in order to secure the exportation of our productions, and the importation of articles necessary for the instruction of youth in the different sciences, arts, and trades, by engaging Europeans of skill in those respective employments, to come and establish themselves among us. I accompanied this proposition with an assurance, that I would go on this business myself; and there was only the old Raffangour Rohandrian who testified his displeasure, and said openly, that I was going to seek my death. He intreated his countrymen to oppose my departure; but, unfortunately, I was too strongly attached

to my principles, and I declared that it was my intention to repair to Europe, in order to conclude treaties of commerce and friendship with any European nation whatever, and that I had only deferred the execution of this project until the form of Government I had established should be in a regular train.

The 14th, 15th, and 16th, I was constantly employed in establishing the rules and orders of Government. This day the envoys of Cimanounpou, King of the Seclaves, were presented to me. They announced a present of eighty slaves, and five hundred oxen; but as they declared they were sent by the King to the French commandant, after having assured them that this title no longer belonged to me, I caused them to be conducted, with their attendants, to Louisbourg; but their astonishment was extreme, when they heard that I was chosen Ampanfacabe, and descendant of the line of Ramini; for it was not till after the death, or rather the massacre, of Ramini Larizon, that the Rohandrian of Boyana, assumed the title of King of the Seclaves.

On the 17th, I purchased the cargo of a private vessel, of the value of forty-five thousand livres, for which I gave one hundred and twenty-eight slaves. This cargo was afterwards consigned to the disposition of Ramaraombe Rohandrian, member of the permanent Council.

On the 18th, judging it necessary to establish an order for the military service, I nominated Sancé Rohandrian, a Mulatto, Miaditombe Generalissimo, and established twelve companies, each of one hundred and fifty Ondzatsi, with orders to look to the preservation of the peace, conformably to the instructions which should be prescribed by the supreme Council. At the instant of this formation, each Rohandrian demanded permission to establish,

tablish, in his respective district, a company of war. I not only granted this request, but ordered them so to do; and, with a view to give a sanction to this military establishment, I determined to make the resolution in full cabar, which I had appointed for the 19th. This day I caused twenty-two standards to be made, in order to be distributed to the different Rohandrians and Anacandrians. These colours had a blue ground, with a white moon in the middle. Those of each legion had a blue square on a white ground, with a moon and six stars in the middle.

On the 19th, the people being assembled in cabar, I gave my sanction to the establishment of bodies of troops; and the colours were distributed with a degree of solemnity which was truly striking.

On the 20th, having a corvette ready to sail, and having regulated the direction of my houses, and provided for the affairs of the nation, I determined to renew the proposals respecting my departure, and demanded titles and powers relative to my mission. The following was concluded on in the Council.

The chiefs Rohandrian, Adacandrian, Voadziri, Lohavohiti, and the people Ondzati and Ombiasses, assembled in general cabar of the nation, having agreed to the proposition made by their Ampanfacabe, and consented that the said Ampanfacabe shall absent himself to make a voyage to Europe, in order to conclude a treaty with the King of France, or any other nation; and to empower him to engage men, skilful in different arts and occupations, to come and dwell at Madagascar; it is in consequence that they have determined to give him entire authority, and absolute power. They promise to him to follow exactly the order which he has prescribed for the form of Government,

vernment, during the whole time of his absence; and they swear to be faithful to him; that they will not admit any foreigner into their island; and still less will they suffer any of their people to make particular treaties with any person whomsoever. They declare likewise, that after the expiration of the term of one year and a half, if they do not see their Ampanfacabe return, they will not suffer any French settlement upon the coast of their island.

But they require that their Ampanfacabe oblige himself to return, whether he shall succeed or not in his enterprize; and that, in case of any retardation, he shall send them news of his safety.

These engagements and resolutions were confirmed by the oath of blood, and the cabar broke up with lamentations, which strongly shook my resolution; but, alas! my destiny was too strong, and I followed its impulse in what appeared to me to be just and reasonable.

After the cabar had risen, Raffangour came to me, to represent once more the danger to which I exposed myself. He assured me, that he knew the French to be ambitious of rendering themselves masters of the island, sooner or later, and that they would make attempts against my life and liberty. He urged examples of their ferocity, by repeating what had been their behaviour upon the island. In a word, he spoke to me in the language of a friend, who was aware of the calamities that awaited me. His reasoning was well founded, and rested upon the highest probability; and I can only blame my zeal to promote the interest of France, at the risk of losing my fortune, my estate, and my life. This day was employed in drawing out the full powers, which were read in the committee, and duly expedited. Here follows a copy of the full powers.

*October*

*October 23, 1776.* In the plain of Mahavelou, the Kings, Princes, chiefs, and people of Madagascar, upon the north and eastern coasts of the island, being united in cabar, or general assembly, having heard the propositions of their Ampanfacabe, placing an entire confidence in his affection towards them, and his sworn fidelity to perform his engagements, give unto him absolute and irrevocable powers to treat in Europe with the King of France, or any other King or nation, and to form commercial or friendly alliances, relations, or engagements. In consequence whereof we declare, in the present cabar, our approval, agreement, and ratification of whatever he shall sign and conclude, in his quality of an Ampanfacabe. And, to consolidate our submissions, we have unanimously resolved, and do appoint, that in case the King of France shall not accept our offers, the Ampanfacabe shall enjoy full authority and power to address himself to any other Sovereign or nation, and to conclude treaties of commerce and friendship with them, and to make other engagements relative thereto. And, in the mean time, during the absence of our Ampanfacabe, we solemnly bind ourselves, not to receive any foreigner into our island, nor to form any treaty or connection with any other nation; in testimony of which we have executed the present instrument, after having caused it to be read and interpreted in full cabar, and have put the same into the hands of our said Lord Ampanfacabe. Signed the year, the month, and the day above written, in the name of the whole nation.

RAFFANGOUR, Rohandrian,  
HIAVI, King of the East,  
LAMBOUIN, King of the North,

On

On the 21st, I informed the chiefs, that being desirous of making preparations for my departure, I should take my leave of them; and I proposed to them to acknowledge, for the whole time of my absence, Raffangour chief of the supreme Council, or, in his absence or failure, the chief Sancé. The rest of this day was taken up in a festival, at which more than forty thousand people were present.

From the 22d of this month to the 10th of December, I was employed in arranging a variety of affairs, of a public as well as private nature.

On the 11th, I went to Louisbourg to assist the commanding officer of that settlement with my advice; and on the 14th, being at last informed, that every thing was embarked on board the brig, the Belle Arthur, which I had freighted to carry me to the Cape of Good Hope, I took my leave to go on board. When I came to the sea side, I found myself surrounded by most of the chiefs of the country, and all the people of the settlement, wishing me a good voyage; and the natives invoking Zahanhar to assist me in my undertakings. At the conclusion they all wept; and, at this single moment of my life, I experienced what the heart is capable of suffering, when torn from a beloved and affectionate society to which it is devoted. At length I went on board, not without paying a tribute to nature, which I had never experienced during the most dreadful sufferings of my tyrannical exile. The north wind at length began to blow afresh; and towards evening I set sail for the Cape of Good Hope, at which place I proposed to freight another vessel, to carry me to France. This voyage may probably give birth to happy circumstances, such as my wishes have formed, in favour of the settlement at Madagascar, and may perhaps repair the faults committed by the minister.

T H E E N D.

PIECES referred to in the MEMOIRS.

---

1775. THE PIECE L. X.

**A**T a meeting of the corps of the officers of the Volunteers, under the Count de Benyowsky.

ON the twenty-second day of September, in the year one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five; the Baron de Benyowsky, Colonel of the said corps of Volunteers, and named after him, and Commander in Chief of the establishments of his Majesty the King of France, upon the island of Madagascar, being informed, by the Surgeon Major, of his critical situation during his illness, which, by the daily and very evident diminution of his strength, threatened to come to a fatal determination: and being desirous, in consequence, to prevent the alarms of the gentlemen officers of his corps; who, beholding their chief sinking under the violence of a dangerous disorder, and being likewise aware of the weak situation of the troops, exposed to an infinity of unhappy consequences, as well on account of the want of pay as cloathing, have desired that a meeting might be held, for the purpose of rendering them acquainted with the will of their chief, and those orders which they should follow, in case of his decease: from these causes and reasons the said Baron de Benyowsky, Colonel of the corps of Volunteers, and Commander in Chief for his Majesty upon this island, has appointed

pointed the twenty-fifth of the present month, in order to consult upon the steps which may be most proper to be taken in such critical circumstances; and in consequence thereof, he has given his orders, that the reasons which have determined him to call the meeting, as well as the results then and there determined upon, should be written down, and entered in the register of the corps.

The Baron de Benyowsky, notwithstanding the violence of his illness, finding himself in possession of perfect understanding and tranquillity of mind, required the consent of his Surgeon Major, that he might preside at the assembly, which at length, after several consultations with the other surgeons, was granted. He therefore ordered the officers of his corps to meet, at the general quarters on the twenty-fifth of the present month, that is to say, Mr. De Mallendre, Captain; Mr. Le Cerf, Captain; Mr. Perthuis, Lieutenant; Mr. Certain, Lieutenant; Mr. De la Boullaye, second Lieutenant; Mr. Lermine, Quartermaster; Mr. Evali, Ensign; Mr. Rosieres, Lieutenant, Aid de Camp, and performing the function of Secretary; and Mr. Bessé, Treasurer, invited to be present at the assembly, in quality of principal officer of the administration, in lieu of principal Storekeeper, or Commissary.

In the year one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five, on the 25th of September: Present the following officers of the corps of Volunteers of Benyowsky; Mr. De Mallendre, Captain; Mr. Le Cerf, Captain; Mr. Perthuis, Lieutenant; Mr. Certain, Lieutenant; Mr. De la Boullaye, second Lieutenant; Mr. De La Tour, second Lieutenant; Mr. Lermine, Quartermaster; Mr. Evali, Ensign; Mr. Rosieres, Lieutenant, Aid de Camp, and performing the function of Secretary; and Mr. Bessé,  
Treasurer,

Treasurer, invited to be present at the assembly, in quality of Storekeeper, or Commissary—Mr. De Sanglier being detached to the isle of France; Mr. De La Boullaye senior, Lieutenant, and Corbi, second Lieutenant, being absent with a party upon this island. The Baron De Benyowsky addressed the assembly as follows:

“ The apprehensions, gentlemen, which you  
“ have entertained concerning my illness, are new  
“ proofs of your attachment; but as I find them  
“ guided by the zeal which you all possess for the  
“ service of the King, our master, it becomes me  
“ to pass over the emotions of gratitude with  
“ which my mind is impressed, and to speak, in  
“ the first place, of the interests with which the  
“ Court has entrusted me, in order that you may  
“ be enabled to proceed with certainty, in case it  
“ should please Divine Providence to require my  
“ life.

“ At the end of the year one thousand seven  
“ hundred and seventy-two, the King gave orders  
“ for raising our corps, and appointed me to the  
“ command. At the beginning of the following  
“ year, I received his Majesty's orders, by the mi-  
“ nisters, to repair with the said corps to this  
“ island; but as I was at the same time enjoined  
“ to keep the subject of our mission a secret, I  
“ durst not acquaint you with the place of our  
“ destination, of which you were not informed  
“ but in a very confused manner, at the isle of  
“ France. You will observe, that it was no want  
“ of confidence on my part, which left you igno-  
“ rant of the subject of our enterprize. The con-  
“ duct which I have held towards you during our  
“ passage, and my diligence in instructing you in  
“ the art of tactics, convinced you of my zeal  
“ for your common good, which you have repaid  
“ by marks of attachment and esteem, which will  
“ never

“ never be effaced from my mind. Since our ar-  
“ rival at our place of destination, we have suffer-  
“ ed together a variety of distresses and fatigue,  
“ and have combated against the intemperance of  
“ a sultry climate, and the violence of a people  
“ jealous of their liberty. We have armed our-  
“ selves with courage to execute the orders we re-  
“ ceived, and success has attended our endeavours,  
“ in spite of the envious fate which pursued us.  
“ Excuse me, my dear companions, if I forbear  
“ to name the authors of our sufferings; you  
“ know them; and the shame which they ought  
“ to feel at seeing themselves discovered and de-  
“ feated, is revenge sufficient. The conduct to  
“ which I have adhered in this island, is so well  
“ known to you, that I need not speak of our past  
“ sufferings. You are convinced that I have done  
“ my duty, in diminishing them, by applying my  
“ own fortune to supply the wants of the estab-  
“ lishment which we have formed. You, your-  
“ selves, by advancing the sums you had received,  
“ have supplied me with means of administering  
“ to the pressing necessities which were so unjustly  
“ refused to be supplied, and without which we  
“ must have been entirely reduced. As a recom-  
“ pence for my zeal and sufferings, I now find  
“ myself repaid by the blackest calumnies, on the  
“ isle of France. There is no disgraceful action  
“ which they have not accused me of. Exclama-  
“ tions are made against the exorbitant expences  
“ which are pretended to have been made in this  
“ island, and against the cruelties committed by  
“ me, or my order, against private traders, by  
“ whom it has been publicly asserted, that they  
“ were compelled to sign certain writings, while  
“ a pistol was held at their breasts. But the most  
“ mortifying circumstance is, that every means  
“ has been used to persuade the public at the isle  
“ of

“ of France, that sufficient supplies have been for-  
“ warded out of their treasury, for the exigen-  
“ cies of the service of the troops here; but that  
“ I have appropriated these sums, and have left the  
“ soldiers without resource, overwhelmed with la-  
“ bour, and threatened with every horror that  
“ tyranny can inflict. These malicious reports, in  
“ which every effort is made to destroy my repu-  
“ tation, would give me no concern in any other  
“ circumstances. I should look upon them with  
“ contempt, if the hope of recovering from the  
“ illness which I now suffer, could permit me to  
“ indulge the expectation of rendering an account  
“ of my conduct, at some future period, to the  
“ King and his ministers: but as I am well aware  
“ of the dangerous consequences which may attend  
“ my present illness, and which every day threat-  
“ ens to take me hence, I conjure you, gentlemen,  
“ by your honour, to render that testimony to the  
“ truth, which may frustrate the views of those  
“ who are desirous of blackening my fame. As  
“ a soldier, and as a chief, you know me from  
“ experience :---render to my name, when I am  
“ no more, that justice which I have deserved by  
“ my conduct, and which you cannot refuse.

“ After this short recital of past circumstances,  
“ I must proceed to our present situation. With  
“ a view to secure the establishment till the arrival  
“ of new orders from Court, and to prevent its  
“ suffering from external attacks, which I foresaw,  
“ I dispatched the Postillion packet for France a  
“ twelvemonth ago, in order to render an account  
“ of our position at Court, and to request supplies.  
“ In the mean time, I have reclaimed the assistance  
“ of the isle of France, pursuant to his Majesty’s  
“ orders, which you may see in the letter which  
“ his minister wrote to the chiefs of that settle-  
“ ment, and which I here produce to convince  
“ you

“ you of the fact. You would doubtless have con-  
“ cluded, as I did, that the supplies would speedily  
“ have been forwarded; but, alas! in reply, I re-  
“ ceived only a refusal, which I have hitherto  
“ concealed, with a view to avoid giving you em-  
“ barrasment and disquiet. This refusal, in the  
“ present juncture, is more particularly distressing,  
“ because I have already employed my whole pro-  
“ perty in the King’s service, and am therefore in-  
“ capable of administering to our present wants.  
“ The stores are filled with useless effects, which  
“ have been sent us from the isle of France, but  
“ are unprovided with the most necessary articles;  
“ the treasury is without money, and the troops  
“ without either pay or cloathing. Such is our  
“ present situation, which is deplorable indeed for  
“ men, who for two years incessantly, without a  
“ pause of twenty-four hours, have been kept in  
“ continual motion; and who, in the last war  
“ against the islanders, have so valiantly distin-  
“ guished themselves under your conduct. The  
“ success of this war, the event of which has se-  
“ cured our good fortune and the tranquillity of  
“ the country, has filled us with joy. We ought,  
“ therefore, to take advantage of the present good  
“ disposition of affairs, for the further encourage-  
“ ment, and raising the spirits of our soldiers:  
“ they are attached to us, gentlemen; nothing is  
“ impossible for them to attempt, under our direc-  
“ tion. I conjure you, therefore, to animate  
“ them, by directing their minds to glory, which  
“ is the great mover of the French nation. An  
“ animated soldier, to whom his officer sets the  
“ example, suffers with willingness: I will even  
“ say more, he runs with avidity to the greatest  
“ hardships. In this manner, therefore, you will  
“ succeed in keeping up the ordinary service,  
“ which is urged by the different parties we are  
“ obliged

“ obliged to maintain. With regard to the nine  
“ months pay due to yourselves and the troops, I  
“ will endeavour partly to discharge it, by dispos-  
“ ing of my small stock of necessaries to a private  
“ vessel, which is now upon the coast. We may  
“ perhaps, likewise, by the same channel, supply  
“ ourselves with articles of trade, for the daily  
“ exigencies of the hospital. In this manner,  
“ ballancing our resources against our misfortunes,  
“ we may hope for new orders from Court, which,  
“ according to all appearance, cannot be longer  
“ delayed than till the return of the Postillion.  
“ Besides this, the spot we now inhabit being ren-  
“ dered more healthy by the works we have exe-  
“ cuted, will secure the health of those who at  
“ present are tolerably well, and are not entirely  
“ exhausted. Our experience this year confirms  
“ this probability. Last year we lost one hundred  
“ and thirteen men; this year the number of  
“ deaths is eleven; which is a difference we have  
“ great reason to value ourselves upon. We have  
“ exposed ourselves, by labouring for the advan-  
“ tage of others, who will enjoy, with safety and  
“ without fear, the fruits of our exertions. No  
“ one will dispute the glory we possess, of having  
“ laboured for the common good, at the peril of  
“ our lives.

“ I shall now leave you, gentlemen, for a short  
“ time, to recover my exhausted strength. In the  
“ mean time, you will consult together upon the  
“ properest means to be adopted in our present  
“ situation. It is unnecessary to observe, that it is  
“ by the orders of his Majesty that we have ex-  
“ erted ourselves upon this spot; and that it is  
“ not enough to have succeeded, but that it is  
“ likewise equally necessary to preserve the advan-  
“ tages we have acquired. There is no difficulty  
“ which

“ which a determined courage cannot overcome,  
 “ Adieu, my friends; I leave you for an in-  
 “ stant.” [Signed]

The BARON DE BENYOWSKY,  
 With his paraph or flourish.

The commander being then exhausted by his illness, retired, after exhorting the gentlemen present to consult together, and lay their opinion before him. Whereupon the meeting deliberated, and determined to draw out their opinions in separate articles, and submit them to their commander in chief.

THE OPINIONS OF THE OFFICERS, WHICH THEY  
 SUBMIT TO THEIR COMMANDER.

PRIMO. The officers of the corps of Volunteers, having attended to the speech of their Commander, are unanimously penetrated with grief to hear, that the zeal which he has shewn, and the numerous exertions he has made, at the expence of his fortune and health, in favour of all those who have had the honour of serving under his orders, have been recompensed by attempts to tarnish his reputation, by acts of imposture and the blackest calumny. As witnesses of his conduct, they think it an act of duty and justice to protest solemnly, by the present resolutions, against all the imputations and pretended malversations. And they mutually engage and bind themselves, in case of the decease of their Commander, to represent this affair to his Majesty and his ministers.

2ndly.

2dly. They have the honour to represent to their Commander in Chief, that, after all the magnanimous efforts with which he has been pleased to maintain the royal establishment, and corps of Volunteers, by furnishing means for the support of every individual hitherto, they shall consider it an honour to follow the example of their Chief; and they intreat his permission, that they may themselves contribute a sum, to be advanced to the treasury, in order that they may by this means be considered as worthy his esteem, and may contribute, to the utmost of their power, to the good of his Majesty's service.

3dly. With respect to the troops, and the service, they will omit nothing which may justify the opinion of their Commander; and they request that, in consideration of the small number of men, he will withdraw the troops from the two intermediate posts of Massoula and Mananhar, in order that the main body, being reinforced, may be better enabled to act in the vicinity of the chief settlement, and defend themselves from the robberies which have been committed by vagabonds since the last war.

4thly. They respectfully entreat that the Commander in Chief will be pleased to consider, that the arrival of a vessel from Europe may be frustrated by several unforeseen events, and that consequently it would be very necessary to send a summons to the isle of France, in the name of his Majesty, to obtain a supply, as well of men as of money and effects for their subsistence.

5thly. The present meeting of officers, perceiving that the health of their Commander is greatly altered; and being likewise informed, by the surgeon-major, that it cannot but be still more impaired by the fatigue and exertions which he continues to make, notwithstanding their opposition; they

they take the liberty unanimously to entreat, that he will, for a certain time, desist from this continued labour. They are more pressing in this respect, as they are actuated by the impresson of that friendship, which he has ever been pleased to shew to the corps of Volunteers, as well as for the interests of the establishment, in which he is bound to consult the advantage of his Majesty's service, by forbearing to make exertions which tend to deprive the settlement of his future services.

6thly. The officers in the last place, take the liberty to represent, that exhausted as they are by past and present distresses, there is not one among them who does not feel his strength greatly impaired, and that a change of garrison is very necessary for the whole corps: they therefore deposit their general interests in the hands of their Commander in Chief, and entreat that he will be pleased to intercede with his Majesty and the ministry in favour of the corps, to procure them a just recompence, and a certain time to recover themselves from the excessive fatigues they have been oppressed with.

Signed with the following names.

*De Mallendre*, with paraph;  
*Le Cerf*, with paraph;  
*Perthuis*, Lieutenant;  
*Le Certain*, Lieutenant;  
*De Veziers*, Lieutenant;  
*De La Boullaye*;  
*Des Graves*, second Lieutenant;  
 The Chevalier *De La Tour*, second Lieutenant;  
*Larmina*, Quartermaster, with paraph;  
*Rozieres*, Lieut. performing the office of Secretary;  
*Besse*, Treasurer, with paraph.

DECISION

DECISION OF THE ASSEMBLY OF THE CORPS OF  
VOLUNTEERS OF BENYOWSKY.

PRIMO. The Commander in Chief being satisfied with the promise of the gentlemen officers of his corps, with regard to what concerns his reputation; and reclaiming only their viva voce testimonies, in case of his premature decease, reserves himself in person to clear himself of all calumnious imputations, and to carry his complaints to the foot of his Majesty's throne.

2dly. The Commander in Chief will take the first opportunity of forwarding a summons to the chief of the isle of France, to obtain the supplies necessary for the subsistence of the establishment.

3dly. The Commander in Chief will distribute among the officers the several departments of daily employment, that he may be enabled to repose himself. He likewise declares, that having disposed of every particular of business relating to the settlement, as well as to his own private affairs, they will find, in case of his decease, his last Will, sealed up in the box marked A, which is in his cabinet, which is placed in the office; the same box contains several papers addressed to the minister, and an order in the King's name, which enjoins that gentleman, who, by his rank among the officers, shall be entitled to succeed him, to conform, until new orders from Court, to the instructions he will find annexed to the order. By this provision, the officers in command will avoid that embarrassment which otherwise might become of great consequence to the establishment. He therefore exhorts them to arm themselves with courage, to support the interests of their master; and

as they have all faced death to acquire glory, so at present it becomes themselves nobly to submit to suffering and distress, in order to maintain it.

4thly. The gentlemen officers of the corps of Volunteers, are requested to form a sum of twelve thousand livres, to be remitted to the treasury, for the payment of the troops; and the Commander in Chief engages to furnish a like sum, for the purchase of different effects and merchandize, for the subsistence of the hospitals, and daily exigencies.

5thly. The posts of Massoula and Mananhar shall be withdrawn, to reinforce the chief settlement, and to defend the cultivated lands of the allied natives from the devastation and fire of the vagabonds.

6thly. The Commander in Chief will forward his pressing representations to the minister, concerning the distresses and fatigues which his corps have endured; and will demand, for the refreshment of the said corps, a garrison better calculated for their recovery, in the internal part of the island.

7thly. An act in form shall be drawn out, of the proceedings of this present assembly of the officers of the corps of Volunteers, which shall consist of three parts, one of which shall be forwarded to the minister, the second to the isle of France, with the summons, and the third shall be deposited in the archives of the corps.

Done in our general camp on the island of Madagascar, the twenty-fifth of September, 1775.

Signed,

The *Baron de Benyowsky*, Colonel and  
Commander in Chief of the French  
settlement on the island of Madag-  
ascar;

*De Mallendre*, with paraph;

*Le*

*Le Cerf*, Captain, with paraph ;  
*Perthuis*, Lieutenant ;  
*Le Certain*, Lieutenant ;  
*De La Boullaye* ;  
*Des Graves*, second Lieutenant ;  
The Chevalier *De La Tour*, second  
Lieutenant ;  
*De Larmina*, Quartermaster ;  
*Rozieres*, Lieutenant, performing the  
office of Secretary ;---and  
*Besse*, Treafurer.

*The Piece L. X. X.*

*At a Council of the Officers of the Corps of Volunteers of Benyowsky, convened by Order of the Baron de Benyowsky.*

April the 1st, 1776. Present in Council convened by order of the Baron de Benyowsky, Col. of the regiment named after him, and Commander in Chief of the French establishment on the island of Madagascar; namely, the Chevalier de Sanguier, Captain: De Mallendre, Captain; Perthuis, first Lieutenant; Corbi, second Lieutenant; the Chevalier de La Tour, second Lieutenant; Larmina, Quartermaster; Evali, Ensign; Rozieres, performing the office of Engineer; Mayeur, Lieutenant, and first interpreter of the establishment; Bessiere, performing the office of Secretary; and Besse, invited to be present in the assembly, in quality of principal officer of the Administration, in lieu of principal Storekeeper or Commissary. The Baron de Benyowsky being president at this Council; and Messrs. Le Certain and De La Boullaye, senior, Lieutenant, being absent; the former detached to the isle of France, and the latter being commander at Foul Point.

The Baron de Benyowsky opened the meeting with the following speech :

“ I have called you together, gentlemen, to consult upon the critical circumstances of our situation, the security of our posts, and the preservation of the several provinces allied to the settlement, as well as the part which it becomes us to take in the present situation with regard to the war with the Seclaves ; whose chief, having declared war against the French standard, has already commenced hostilities, by ravaging the people, who are allied by oath to the establishment, and who, if unassisted by us, may be compelled by force to yield to our enemies, and become subject to them. All these circumstances require the utmost attention of the settlement ; and that more especially, as their increase will threaten us with the loss of the fruits of all the laborious exertions we have made for the space of three years ; and as they happen at a time when the forces of the establishment are exhausted. These positions, therefore, require a minute discussion, in order that we may form a well-digested plan ; and that, without having the rashness to face every event, we may exert that courage which will be sufficient to answer our purposes ; and by collecting our forces, we may maintain our labours with glory, and crown them by the titles of brave soldiers, and faithful servants of the King who has employed us.

“ It is unnecessary to enumerate, at present, the various checks and vexations to which we have so unjustly been subjected, and which have placed the settlement in the most unhappy and critical situation, and reduced our people to a state of extreme weakness. All these circumstances are well known to you, as we discussed them in the last meeting, held on the 25th of  
“ September,

“ September, 1775, and provided a temporary  
“ remedy, in the hope of speedy assistance either  
“ from the isle of France or from Europe. But,  
“ since that period, six months have elapsed, and  
“ the small assistance we have derived from the isle  
“ of France being scarcely sufficient to maintain  
“ us until this time, our distresses cannot but in-  
“ crease, and must at last overwhelm us. At pre-  
“ sent it is necessary to oppose them with deter-  
“ mined courage. For this purpose, let us sup-  
“ pose that the supplies, though daily expected,  
“ are still far from their arrival; let us make our  
“ account for the actual situation of things; let  
“ us calculate the forces we really possess, and up-  
“ on this estimate let us decide what conduct is the  
“ most proper to be held. Our own assurance of  
“ having employed all the resources of our cou-  
“ rage, in the service of his Majesty, will be an  
“ ample recompense for our labours.

“ If we consider the number which usually com-  
“ poses a troop, and look to ourselves, we shall  
“ see only a feeble remnant, worn out by the se-  
“ vere pressure of long and assiduous fatigue;  
“ scarcely equal to the ordinary service; no lon-  
“ ger daring to quit their forts and retrench-  
“ ments.—But it is a consequence of that valorous  
“ spirit, which ought to be natural to a soldier,  
“ that we should raise our courage beyond that  
“ of common minds: the more the vicissitudes of  
“ events oppress and overwhelm us, the more it  
“ becomes us to collect our force and firmness.  
“ Bound as we are by the ties of honour, and of  
“ duty, to justify the confidence of the Court,  
“ which has appointed us to form a solid establish-  
“ ment in this island, we can do no otherwise  
“ than resolve to vanquish and subdue all obsta-  
“ cles. Three years have now elapsed since we  
“ bade adieu to the pleasures of a life of tranqui-  
“ ty

“ ty ; we have familiarized ourselves to hardships,  
“ labours, and war, and we have withstood the  
“ rigours of this unwholesome climate. Thou-  
“ sands of enemies, whom we have conquered  
“ and dispersed, have acquired us that reputation  
“ through the whole extent of this vast island,  
“ which has procured the alliances of more than  
“ one third of its whole people.—What risque  
“ then should we now run, by dividing our  
“ troops, and appointing one half to guard our  
“ posts, which are fortified and provided with  
“ artillery ; while the other half takes the field,  
“ and carries terror to the enemy, keeps the neu-  
“ tral powers in respect, and preserves the allies  
“ of the settlement ? Such an engagement, well  
“ made, may open to us resources we have hither-  
“ to been unacquainted with. The supplies, so  
“ long expected, will at last arrive, and then every  
“ difficulty and obstacle will be surmounted. The  
“ troops, when reinforced, will resume their pri-  
“ mitive vigour ; and having kept the enemy in  
“ check, they will then entirely destroy them.  
“ The storehouses being furnished, will increase  
“ the confidence of the natives of the country ;  
“ who having, since our arrival here, been amuf-  
“ ed with mere promises, and seeing no supplies  
“ arrive, may join the Seclaves, the only nation  
“ which remains for us to fight and subdue ; be-  
“ cause its natural obstinacy will never suffer them  
“ to be surpris'd by negotiation, and because they  
“ neglect no opportunity of engaging all the other  
“ nations of the island in their interest, either by  
“ promise or threats. We have therefore only  
“ the strength of our arms, and our superiority  
“ in the art of war, to oppose against them. To  
“ purchase peace is contrary to the character of the  
“ French ; and would, besides, diminish our re-  
“ putation, and debase us in the eyes of all the  
“ nations

“ nations of this island, who would revolt, when  
“ they saw us undecided and embarrassed in our  
“ proceedings with one national one ; whereas several  
“ nations have been reduced at the mere  
“ sight of us, and have not dared to collect their  
“ forces in opposition to our enterprizes, but have  
“ all attached themselves, by treaty, to the settlement.  
“ Their attachment must be preserved by  
“ civilization, and justice duly administered to  
“ them. The mild treatment they have received  
“ from us, and the assistance we have given them  
“ against their enemies, have secured their esteem ;  
“ and, forgetting the name of foreigner, they  
“ now behold in us the friend and the ally. But  
“ the instant we refuse to assist them against the  
“ Seclaves, and they lose that respect for us which  
“ fear produces, they will indubitably arrange  
“ themselves on the stronger side, and encrease  
“ that force.

“ All these circumstances, gentlemen, require  
“ a speedy decision, on our part, in order that we  
“ may act in the most becoming and certain manner.  
“ As far as I can see into our situation, and  
“ the position in which we stand with regard to  
“ the natives, we cannot dispense with entering  
“ into the war against the Seclaves. It is therefore  
“ an object of discussion, whether we ought  
“ to confine ourselves merely to the defence of the  
“ frontiers of our allies, in conjunction with them,  
“ or whether we ought to begin an offensive war,  
“ by entering into their country : for it is impossible  
“ for us to remain in our forts, and behind  
“ our entrenchments, in a state of expectation,  
“ until our enemies come upon us. We should  
“ by that means expose our allies, who dwell on  
“ their frontiers, to continual ravages and slavery,  
“ and the establishment will not be able to clear  
“ itself

“ itself of the blame, as it is engaged to support  
“ its allies against all the attempts of their enemies.

“ These are just reasons, which ought to deter-  
“ mine us to take the field, and to carry the war  
“ to the frontier of the Seclaves. By this man-  
“ œuvre, we shall cover our own possessions,  
“ with those of our allies, and we shall be in a  
“ situation, on the arrival of the first supply of  
“ men, in consequence of the knowledge we shall  
“ have acquired of the country, and of the means  
“ necessary to be employed against the enemy, to  
“ attack them in our turn, subdue them, and  
“ compel them to accept of such terms as we shall  
“ prescribe.

“ After having thus given a detail to you, gen-  
“ tlemen, of our present circumstances, and com-  
“ municated my views, I request that you will  
“ discuss the part which it is necessary to take in  
“ an enterprize of such delicacy, and let me  
“ know your sentiments without delay.”

Done at Louisbourg, April 1, 1776.

Signed,

The BARON DE BENYOWSKY.

The corps of officers of the Volunteers, after having maturely considered and discussed the steps practicable to be taken, to prevent the inconveniences probably to arise from the violence of the enemies which threaten the establishment, perceive no better than to take the field immediately, and to carry the war to the frontiers of the Seclaves; and in this manner to keep the enemy in continual movement, until the arrival of the final orders of his Majesty, and the supplies, which cannot fail to arrive soon. They are confident in affirming, that though the number of the troops, to be  
divided

divided for the service of war, and the defence of the chief settlement and out-posts, be small, yet the valour and courage of each company will justify the opinion of the Commander in Chief; and that the corps desires nothing more ardently, than to receive orders which may give them an opportunity of performing their duty in a manner worthy of themselves.

With regard to the alternative of an offensive or defensive war, the corps of officers, not being desirous of anticipating the will of their Commander, will always follow with spirit the decision he shall make, and upon which the success of the campaign will probably depend.

Done this 1st of April, 1776, at the general camp of Louisbourg.

Signed,

The Chevalier SANGLIER;  
 DE MALLENDRE;  
 LE CERF;  
 DE LA BOULLAYE;  
 DES GREVES;  
 CORBI;  
 The Chevalier DE LA TOUR;  
 ROZIERES;  
 MAYEUR;  
 LARMINA;  
 EVALI;—and  
 BESSE.

ESTABLISH-

## ESTABLISHMENT

A T

## MADAGASCAR.

---

 ADMINISTRATION GENERAL AND PARTICULAR.

\* Demands, Observations, and Questions, proposed to the Baron de Benyowsky, Colonel and Commander of the Establishments of his Majesty, the King of France, upon the island of Madagascar, by Messrs. De Bellecombe and Chevreau, by virtue of the the powers vested in them, as Inspectors and Commissaries for his Majesty upon the said island of Madagascar.

## ARTICLE I.

**W**E demand of the Baron de Benyowsky that he do communicate to us the original of the orders of the King, with the dispatches and instructions of the minister, by virtue of which he came to take possession, in his Majesty's name,

\* This appears to be the piece *L. X. A.* referred to at page 239 of the present volume, though the mark is omitted in the manuscript. In the original, the Questions and Replies are arranged in columns opposite each other; but I have, for the convenience of printing, subjoined each Answer to the Question, which precedes it. NOTE OF THE EDITOR.

to form an establishment and command at Madagascar, at the place called the Bay of Antongil; and also the ordonnance for creating a corps of Volunteers, in his name, which bears date the 30th October, 1772; and a communication of the dispatches and correspondences of the marine and colonies, and of Messrs. the chiefs of the Administration of the isle of France.

*Answer to ARTICLE I.*

I have the honour to present to Messrs. the commissaries, hereunto annexed, under cover *L. A.* the orders of Court, which they demand, and also the ordonnance of my corps, and my correspondence with the ministers and the chiefs of the Administration of the isle of France. As I received no orders to take any possession in the island of Madagascar, I have confined myself to the establishment of posts, for the facilitation of trade, and the cultivation of the ground; and have formed connections and treaties of friendship and mutual interest with the natives of the country, who have voluntarily granted the lands upon which the different forts and the chief settlement are situated.

ARTICLE II.

We demand of the Baron de Benyowsky, an accurate and full statement, or list, by name, of the officers, subalterns, and volunteers, people employed, sea-faring men, and other subjects of his Majesty whomsoever, that have been subject to his orders at Madagascar, or who are at this present time under his command; together with their places of residence, and respective functions.

*Answer*

*Answer to ARTICLE II.*

I have the honour to present to Messrs. the commissaries, the register of the corps of Volunteers, in order that they may receive information of the names of all the soldiers who came hither with me, or have been enrolled either in the military or sea service since that time, and those who are at present actually under my orders. The marginal notes indicate their places of residence, and their functions. As to the persons who are employed in the Administration, their registers will exhibit their number, and other particulars. *L. B.*

## ARTICLE III.

We likewise demand another accurate and full statement, or list by name, of all the officers, subalterns, and Volunteers, people employed, sea-faring men, or other subjects of his Majesty, who have either died, or have departed, together with the days of their death, or desertion, from the commencement of the establishment until the present day: and as it is very interesting to their families to possess the titles and accounts of such as have died or deserted, we demand details for each individual man, inventories, verbal processes of sales, and accounts of the succession of each; in order to transmit the same to the minister, who has expressly instructed us on this head, as well as on that of remitting the respective amounts, in bills of exchange, to France.

*Answer to ARTICLE III.*

List of all the persons who have died upon this Island, since the formation of the settlement, are hereunto annexed, *L. C.* With regard to the inven-

inventories and produce of the succession of those who have died, and were of the military, I have remitted to the minister the amount, in bills of exchange, with inventories of sales, agreeably to his orders. I here speak only of the military, as I have no concern with those who have been employed in the Administration.

*A R T I C L E IV.*

What is the present state of his Majesty's treasury and stores at Madagascar? We demand of the Baron de Benyowsky, to present to us, or to cause the persons accountable (the treasurer and storekeeper) to present to us, lists or inventories, signed by him and them, of the nett residue in hand, at the time of our arrival.

*Answer to A R T I C L E IV.*

The cash and stores, at Madagascar, having been entrusted, since the departure of Mr. Des Assises, the principal storekeeper, to Mr. Aumont, the principal storekeeper, and to Mr. Besse; the lists and inventories will ascertain its situation. The treasury and stores have been supplied, for three years past, only by advances I have made.

*A R T I C L E V.*

What are the public works, such as roads or canals, begun or finished? what are the fortifications and civil buildings, erected upon his Majesty's account, in the island of Madagascar, since the arrival of the Baron de Benyowsky? We demand a full statement, with values annexed; and likewise an account of the artillery and warlike stores attached to the settlement.

Does

Does not the island of Madagascar afford all the necessary materials such as lime-stones, bricks, and wood, for every kind of building ?

*Answer to ARTICLE V.*

The public works, roads, fortifications, and civil erections, made by my orders, on account of his Majesty, will appear by the engineer's statement, who is charged with this department. I have the honour to present this statement, under cover L. D. ; and also a full account of the artillery and ammunition of war.

The island of Madagascar affords bricks, lime-stones, wood in planks, as well for exportation, as for every kind of building.

ARTICLE VI.

We likewise demand of the Baron de Benyowfky, a communication of all the registers of receipts and disbursements whatever, made on the island of Madagascar, and on the occasion of the several posts which he has established since his arrival ; together with a table of comparison of all the sums he received in Europe, at the isle of France, and at Madagascar, under what title and denomination soever they may have been received ; whether since he was appointed colonel and chief of this great undertaking ; whether in effects of trade, silver, piastres, calabashes, paper money, or letters of exchange ; with all the expenditures and consumptions, of what nature soever they may be.

*Answer to ARTICLE VI.*

I have the honour to present to the commissaries, a general statement of the balance of debits  
and

and credits, drawn out in the month of May, in the present year. The disbursements since made, will be easily known by the registers of the treasury. The statement shews, that the receipt, until the arrival of the commissaries, amounted only to six hundred and forty thousand livres : and the piece *B.* contains expences ; the amount of which forms the sum of two million nine hundred eighty-three thousand one hundred eighty-six livres, seven sols, and eleven deniers, of which sum the royal treasury is indebted to me four hundred and fifteen thousand livres. By comparing these two statements, the commissaries will be convinced, that the sum of one million seven hundred twenty-eight thousand one hundred and eighty-six livres has been procured by commerce, and the voluntary presents of the natives of the country.

#### A R T I C L E VII.

To what sum per month do the whole expences made up on the account of his Majesty, in the bay of Antongil, and the other settlements dependant thereon, amount to, reckoning from the first of October, in the actual state of affairs ? We request the Baron de Benyowsky to supply us with accounts at large, distinguishing the different nature of the expences under these heads :

Effective troops ;

Administration—the persons employed, and other servants, whether black or white men, who receive wages ;

Hospitals ;

Marine ;

The maintenance of public buildings ;

Subsistence ;

What

What is the manner of paying these expences; in money, in paper-money, in letters of exchange, or in articles of trade?

*Answer to A R T I C L E VII.*

In the actual state of the corps of Volunteers, their subsistence and pay will amount to the sum of eleven thousand eight hundred and sixty livres.

Administration.—With regard to the subsistence and pay of those employed in this department, and other Europeans who receive wages, I can speak nothing, as their quantum is regulated by the chief of the Administration.

Hospitals—Cost per month, one thousand eight hundred livres.

Marine.—About two thousand livres.

Maintenance of public buildings—Value in merchandize, one thousand six hundred livres.

Blacks in his Majesty's pay—Value in merchandize, nine hundred livres.

The most ready manner of acquitting these expences, is to pay in money, which being laid out in the purchase of necessaries at the storehouses, will of course return into the treasury: by this means, the provision of subsistence will diminish; their consumption will be more proportioned to the state of each individual, and the specie will either be kept in circulation, or return into the treasury, by sale of effects from the storehouses.

A R T I C L E VIII.

The trade for rice and cattle being, by the account we have received at the isle of France, one of the motives which have determined Government to form an establishment at the isle of Madagascar, we demand of the Baron de Benyowsky, what

what are the causes of the want of success hitherto ; and why the isle of France has not been supplied with these two objects, rice and cattle, for three years past ; especially after the considerable remittances which have been made in articles of trade for this purpose ?

We demand accounts of the consignments he has made to the isle of France, in slaves, cattle, and rice ; and also an account of the sale of these three articles, which he may have made to individuals on the King's account.

*Answer to ARTICLE VIII.*

The cause of the want of success in supplying the isle of France in rice and cattle, can only be attributed to the ill will which the chief of the Administration of the isle of France has shewn towards the settlement at Madagascar. The first consignment which he made in piece goods and muskets, the only articles necessary for the rice trade, was scarcely sufficient to pay the first expences of the necessary things required for the foundation of this establishment. Moreover, he has never satisfied the demands, which I have repeatedly made to furnish articles of trade. The invoices of his consignments, which I have the honour to present to the commissaries, under the mark L E. will justify my assertions. Besides which, although I have often repeated to the chiefs of the isle of France, that rice and cattle were in great plenty, they have for a long time left me ignorant of their disposition in this respect ; until at length they declared, that they renounced all these supplies. Their correspondence, which I have the honour to present to Messrs. the commissaries, will evidently convince them of this assertion. Besides which, with regard to the article of trade, I can-

not enter too minutely into it, because this part was under the care of Mr. Des Affiffes, the commissary and subdelegate, who naturally must have possessed instructions *ad hoc*. The correspondence of this administrator with the chiefs of the isle of France, must itself justify my assertions, that the trade of rice, slaves and cattle, and the necessary supplies, have been neglected by the fault of the isle of France. I again request the commissaries to examine the invoices of the consignments from the isle of France to the establishment at Madagascar; and I hope they will then acknowledge, that the supplies have certainly not been considerable.

The papers of the Administration must contain details of the consignments made to the isle of France, in slaves, cattle, and rice; and likewise of the sales of these three articles made to private orders, on the King's account. This department being absolutely foreign to my charge, and Mr. Maillart having required me to leave the entire disposition of the same to his sub-delegate, I am not acquainted with the detail, excepting so far as it was necessary for me to render myself acquainted with it, to develop the motives which determined Mr. Maillart so earnestly to counteract my operations.

#### A R T I C L E IX.

What number of men does the Baron apprehend to be necessary as a garrison, to maintain themselves in the chief place, which he has chosen, and its dependencies?

#### *Answer to* A R T I C L E IX.

I am at a loss to reply to the commissioners questions, contained in their ninth article, being entirely ignorant under what point of view the settlement

ment at Madagascar is considered. I shall assume three:—

1st. The establishment at Madagascar, may be considered as intended to acquire the dominion of this vast island, to form a solid colony of Europeans, which, when once master of the whole island, will form a part of the power of the parent state; and by its natural fertility, will supply the indispensable wants of the other French colonies, by including in itself a military force, may be advantageously employed against the enemies of the parent country in India. The conduct of the minister and the mission of the commissaries, induce me to make this digression.

2dly. The establishment at Madagascar, may be considered as a pacific military post, intended to gain the confidence of the natives of the country; to form treaties of friendship and commerce with them; to secure the trade which the merchants might carry on in this island; and watch over and regulate them, in order that the trade of private vessels may not, in future, occasion those irregularities and disorders, of which formerly there existed so many examples.

3dly. The establishment may likewise be considered under the point of view of being tolerated by the natives, and under this head I cannot explain myself.

Upon which of these three principles the minister may consider it as most expedient to found the establishment, must rest with your own opinions, gentlemen. My operations and labours have hitherto been directed to form the establishment upon a fundamental basis, which is the second of the three points of view which I have proposed: I have pursued it, and can venture to assert, that the means which I have employed, have been necessary for its success; the particular instructions of

the Court have led me to it : I have the honour to present these to the commissaries, and beg that they will please to examine their purport.

### A R T I C L E X.

What are the chief places or posts upon the coast, or in the interior parts of the island, which depend upon the principal settlement? In what situation are they with respect to public buildings or erections; more especially that called the Plain of Health; what advantage is derived from them, or what useful purpose do they answer?

Is it easy to cross the island from east to west, from the bay of Antongil to Bambetok;

What posts has the Baron established to secure the communication?

#### *Answer to A R T I C L E X.*

The chief places and posts, dependant on the principal settlement established at the Bay of Antongil, are fort St. John, fort Augustus, Antsirac, Mananhar, Tossoula, fort St. Maurice at Angontziri, Feneif, fort Francis at Foul Point, and the settlement, or factory, at Tamatava. As the commissaries have inspected the works at Louisbourg, fort St. John, and fort Augustus or the Plain of Health, it is unnecessary to describe them. The others consist of pallisades, surrounding houses, built after the country fashion, for the necessary lodging. Each post has its advantage with regard to trade; but my principal object in establishing them, was to secure such posts as, by their situation, might render us masters of the trade of the country, by securing the navigation of the principal rivers. The situation in which the commissaries now find me, by taking the second principle

as the basis of my settlement, will shew the propriety of my operations. The passage from east to west, is easy; and its difficulties may be removed by a very moderate exertion of force. This operation having been one of the principal parts of my plan, I have begun it; but the want of force has checked my exertions. There are five posts to secure this communication; but as I thought proper to give up to the chiefs in alliance with the establishment, the posts of Ranoumena, Antangnin, and Angonum, I have kept only two, namely, that of fort St. John, and that of the Plain.

#### A R T I C L E XI.

What is the name of the chief of the territory upon which our settlement is formed; what is the extent of his dominions; do we possess property in land, or concessions acquired, or in farm, at the bay of Antongil, and the dependant posts? In this case we request the Baron de Benyowsky to communicate to us the titles.

#### *Answer to* A R T I C L E XI.

The name of the prince who formerly possessed the ground, which he voluntarily ceded to form our settlement, is Sianique. The extent of the possession of the place is one half league, included between the harbour and the great river. The chiefs reside in the town which I have formed, but their habitations are in the interior parts of the island. The property of the province of Antimaron belongs to the natives of the country; but they willingly surrender up lands, to engage the Europeans to settle among them, and cultivate the waste grounds. Messrs. the commissaries, may more particularly inform themselves  
in

in this respect, at the approaching assembly of the chiefs of the province, which I have invited, by their orders.

#### A R T I C L E XII.

We demand a full list of the names of the principal Madagascar chiefs, who have acknowledged the authority of his Majesty, and have become tributary. What does the annual tribute consist of, to which they have submitted? What receipts have been made for his Majesty of these different tributes, or annual acknowledgments?

We demand of the Baron de Benyowsky, that he do convene, within the course of eight days, these different tributary chiefs, in order that we may ourselves assure them of the protection of his Majesty.

#### *Answer to Article XII.*

None of the chiefs have acknowledged the authority of the King; but they have attached themselves to us and the settlement, by treaties: their names are as follow;—Sianique, Mandingue, Raoul, Diamanongue, Manon, Manongamanon, Diamandrine; these chiefs have fifty other chiefs subordinate to them, who are all of the province of Antimarou: Raffene, a Sambarive chief, established at the village of Antianak, with four other chiefs; Raffangour, Cievi, Sancé, Dame, principal chiefs of the Sambarives, of Mananhar, having forty chiefs subordinate to them, of the people of Antavavi, Antivoitchou, Antivohibey, and Antimokol; Lambarante, with twelve other chiefs, of the province of Laontoufou; France, Siloulout, with twenty chiefs, established at Rantanbay; King Hiavi, with fifty chiefs, of the province of Foul Point, and Tamatava; Ramaraombe, Diamasse, with thirty chiefs, of the province of the Antifambarives

sambarives to the eastward; Rafidumoine, Diafaiche, Diaboulmassou, with thirty chiefs, of the province of Angontzi; Lambouin, chief of the northern part of the island, with his family, consisting of twenty chiefs, at Voemara.

The chiefs and people of Madagascar pay no tribute to the establishment, but I have procured revenues to the settlement, under the title of subsidies: they consist of rice, cattle, and some slaves. Before the last war of Antimaron, the chiefs furnished, each for his own village, eight gamelles of rice, and four oxen. I have usually accepted the value in timber, planks and slaves, as the accounts of the stores will shew. The amount of the subsidies for this fourth year, is nine hundred and forty-two thousand livres.

The chiefs shall be assembled on the day fixed by the commissaries.

### A R T I C L E XIII.

What treaties, or reciprocal engagements, subsist between the French nation and the different Madagascar chiefs?

What places do these last inhabit, and what are their forces and credit?

What is the nature of their revenues? Are they acquainted with the right of property in land?

Have we any alliance with the King of the Seclaves, who is said to be the most powerful, and most warlike, of all the Madagascar chiefs?

### *Answer to* ARTICLE XIII.

I have the honour to present to Messrs. the commissaries, the treaties and mutual engagements between the islanders and the French: they form only three articles;—1st. That the Madagascar nations shall permit freedom of trade in their country,

try, and the erection of habitations wherever the ground is uncultivated: they willingly grant lands to the French. 2dly. That they shall support the French settlement against all the enterprizes of their enemies. 3dly. That the French shall in no wise interfere in the private interests of the natives, unless they shall be required to act as mediators.

The forces of all the chiefs allied to the establishment, may be estimated at one hundred and twenty-three thousand warriors: this number varies according to the abundance of their harvests. Their revenues consist of sugar, tobacco, indigo, cotton, rice, slaves, and cattle.

They are acquainted with the right of property; and a chief can be dispossessed no otherwise than by the course of inheritance, or the chance of war.

We have formed an alliance with the chief of the Seclaves; but the chiefs which are subordinate to him, having interfered in the war of Antimaroon against the establishment, I have declared war against him, until he shall disavow this proceeding, and render justice to the establishment upon the chiefs who have taken up arms against our friends. The Seclaves, though they are very brave in war, have never possessed any superiority over the rest of the nation.

#### A R T I C L E XIV.

Is there any national militia, or natives of the country, who have voluntarily submitted, as defenders of the settlement, to the orders of the Baron de Benyowsky? What is their number? How are they collected together? Under what conditions have they engaged in our service? Is it practicable in case of need, to transport the free natives of Madagascar, into India, to be employed in war?

Why

Why did the Baron de Benyowsky adopt the project of introducing into the island of Madagascar, black slaves, purchased at Mozambique on his Majesty's account, as he has explained himself in his correspondence with the isle of France?

*Answer to ARTICLE XIV.*

In the infancy of the establishment, I kept a troop of armed natives in pay, who served in several excursions I caused my officers to make, upon discovery and observation in the internal parts of the island; but not having received the orders I demanded of the minister to this effect, and finding them to become chargeable, as I had no need of them since the commencement of this year, I have dismissed them, and have substituted in their place, black slaves from Mozambique, belonging to his Majesty, whose number though small, in the present situation of the establishment, may be sufficient in case of necessity.

The free blacks may likewise be employed in war; they may be had to the number of three, four, five, and six thousand from each province. Their discipline consists in obedience, without restriction; they are collected together by sending a signal, which they know to belong to me. Their arms are musquets and sagayes. Their terms of engaging are, a musquet for forty days, and their provisions. Mr. La Bourdonnais and Mr. Laly, transported the free natives of this country to India, to serve in the war; but as the governors, instead of recompensing them, reduced them to slavery, I dare not promise that they will consent to leave their country, until their confidence in the French nation shall be again restored. The project of introducing Mozambique slaves into Madagascar,

Madagascar, naturally presented itself, on account of the impossibility of their running away. As they are strangers in this country, they are more laborious; besides which, their assistance cannot be dispensed with in the sugar and indigo works.

#### A R T I C L E X V.

Is it with pleasure that the inhabitants of Madagascar see us established among them? Would colonists from the isle of France, or Bourbon, if transported by Government to this island, be in any danger of being disturbed by the natives; or, on the contrary, would they be so far satisfied as to profit by our arts, and industry?

#### *Answer to* ARTICLE XV.

Messrs. the commissaries will have an opportunity of ascertaining, in the assembly of the chiefs, whether the natives of Madagascar look with pleasure upon the French, who are established among them. French colonists transported hither, to form an European settlement, would be in perfect safety, throughout the whole extent of the island, provided the colonial government made no attempts upon the liberty of the nation. The natives of Madagascar desire their presence, and their industry would increase by emulation. It is only by example that we can succeed in bringing the Madagascar people to submit to our regular form of government, and become civilized.

#### A R T I C L E X V I.

What is the character of the people who live in the country round about the bay of Antongil?

Are

Are they surrounded by nations, or numerous people, who are powerful rivals, enemies, or friends?

Are they sedentary; cultivators of the land; warriors? Have they any trade? With whom, and in what consists this commerce? Is the country wooded? To what uses can this wood be applied? What are the productions of the land; whether spontaneous, or by cultivation? Would corn thrive at the bay of Antongil?

*Answer to* ARTICLE XVI.

The character of the natives of Madagascar is the same throughout the island: curious, facile, superficial, superstitious, ambitious, revengeful, voluptuous, hospitable, compassionate, credulous, prodigal; one day sedentary, the next industrious cultivators of the land, and the next warriors. Their principal commerce is with us; but their interior trade consists of exchange of slaves for cattle or rice. The country is well wooded, and the wood may be applied to every imaginable use. The productions of the country are rice, sugar canes, indigo, tobacco, benzoan, incense, wax, honey, cotton, silk, wood, various pulse and fruit, and a large quantity of horned cattle. From my own trials, I am assured, that bread corn, barley, and oats, prosper at the bay of Antongil.

A R T I C L E XVII.

Do the people of Madagascar live in society? Have they a form of government; or are they governed by usage, or follow the simple notions of the law of nature? Have they any religion, or at least a notion of a God? Do they adore him? Are they disposed to submit to the French government,  
to

to adopt our police, our usages, and our religion? Are they industrious, diligent, and laborious? Have they any arts and manufactures? Are they curious with regard to the productions of ours? What productions or merchandize are most acceptable to them? Are they imitators? Would it be easy to inspire them with a taste for instruction of every kind?

*Answer to* A R T I C L E XVII. e

The Madagascar people live in society, and have a form of government, which is Aristocratical; their laws are traditional; and they have a religion, and adore one God.

Their dispositions, by inclination, attach them to the French; but they are too jealous of their liberty, ever to submit with willingness to a foreign government. They adopt our usages and police; but I cannot venture to affirm any thing respecting a change of religion. The satisfaction of possessing a plurality of wives, is a charm which is too strong for them to think of adopting our religion: the women seem desirous of embracing it; perhaps for the contrary reason, of having each an husband to herself. They are industrious, docile, and good workmen in metals and wood, such as goldsmiths, blacksmiths, armourers, and carpenters. Their manufactures consist in coverings, or cloths, for the waist, which are made out of the fibres\* of the sugar cane, upon the eastern coast, and of silk and cotton, upon the west coast; they are, besides, very desirous of our productions, cloths, brandy, gun-powder, musquets, razors, hatchets, silver toys, mirrors, knives, and pewter

\* So I translate *Pagnes de Taffia*; perhaps improperly. E.

utenfils. They are very fond of Galloon lace; are imitators, and disposed to learn trades.

### A R T I C L E XVIII.

Do the natives of Madagascar come willingly to settle near us? What is their manner of trading, and the articles exchanged between us and them?

Do the commodities annually imported by the Arabians, on the west part of the island, become dispersed over the whole island, and as far as the bay of Antongil? What are these? Would it be easy for us to extend communications throughout the whole island; and by what means? How and in what manner have the subjects of his Majesty, who formerly traded to this island, been informed of his intention, that such trades should be prohibited in those parts where the Baron de Benyowsky settled? Has any ordonnance been promulgated at the isle of France to this effect? What private vessels have been confiscated by the Baron de Benyowsky to his Majesty's use; and what is the amount of their cargoes?

#### *Answer to* A R T I C L E XVIII.

The Madagascar people establish their dwellings by preference, near those of the white men. The articles of exchange in this trade, consist of piece goods, brandy, and other merchandizes, mentioned in the preceding article; they furnish rice, cattle, and slaves: they are likewise glad to receive piastres. The Arabians carry on a considerable trade with them; but they only receive in exchange for their merchandize, benzoin, incense, a small quantity of amber, a large quantity of tortoiseshell and rice: they bring waist-cloths from Surat, silver bracelets, gold ear-rings, gold and silver in plates  
and

and hatchets, very ill made. The principal trade of the Arabians is with the nation of the Seclaves.

According to the plan of the second principle which I have laid down, the communications from east to west may be extended over the whole island: this may be done with moderate forces, but the confidence of the chiefs must be secured, in order that they may furnish workmen and labourers.

The chiefs of the government of the isle of France have informed the public of the interdiction of trade, and have promulgated this order upon the island. There have been no private vessels confiscated since my arrival on this island; several have been arrested, carrying on prohibited trade, but I released them, upon being assured that the owners and captains knew nothing of the prohibition. Such were the vessels *La Flore* and *Le Coureur*.

#### A R T I C L E XIX.

What is the most simple, the most certain, and the most advantageous method of trading with Madagascar for rice, cattle, and slaves, which we are in the habit of obtaining from thence? Are slaves plentiful in the country near the bay of Antongil, and upon the eastern coast? Would it be easy to trade in the interior part of the island? But if Government should think proper to establish a colony at Madagascar, would it not be more advantageous to forbear trading in slaves at all?

#### *Answer to* A R T I C L E XIX.

The most simple, certain, and advantageous method of carrying on the trade of rice, cattle, and slaves, which are usually obtained from Madagascar, is to purchase these articles with ready money; and

and to open sales, at the store-houses of the established posts, for articles of merchandize, to be paid for in ready money; such, for example, as piece goods, musquets, gunpowder, brandy. In this way the money would return by circulation, which would be sufficient for the purposes of trade, by means of a moderate annual supply, even for the carrying on very considerable commerce. The inhabitants of the bay of Antongil, being all husbandmen, never sell slaves; but, on the contrary, they make purchases of them every year. The whole of the east coast affords a very small number of slaves: they are brought from the interior parts of the island, from Ovou Antiasnak. The population of Madagascar is very moderate, in proportion to its extent; and in case Government should propose to export more than two thousand blacks annually, the country would soon be depopulated, if the supply were not kept up by the importation of Mozambique slaves, who, under the discipline of the European colonists, would form a particular militia, and by uniting with the Madagascar women would produce a peculiar race, very proper for the formation of new establishments. It would doubtless, be necessary to prohibit the trade of Madagascar slaves.

#### A R T I C L E XX.

What may be nearly the total amount of the population of Madagascar, at present? Is the interior part of the island inhabited? Do all these people speak the same language?

#### *Answer to* A R T I C L E XX.

The total of the population of Madagascar, in its present state, does not exceed two million five hundred

hundred thousand males. The interior part of the island is inhabited, and very populous. All the people of Madagascar speak very nearly the same language.

## ARTICLE XXI.

What observations has the Baron de Benyowsky made upon that which is called the north part of Madagascar? Is it equally populous, abounding with cattle, and fertile as the southern part? For what reason did the Baron de Benyowsky prefer extending his settlement into the north, rather than towards the south part of the island, which, according to the received opinion, offers more resources for trade, and is likewise better peopled, and more abounding with rice, cattle, and slaves?

*Answer to* ARTICLE XXI.

The observations which I have made upon the north part of the island of Madagascar, are, that it abounds in cattle, timber, and rice, and has several harbours very well situated for trading with the coasts of Africa, Surat, Mascat, Baffora, Toka, and the Arabian islands. The northern coast is more fertile than that to the southward, and abounds with a greater quantity of cattle.

The reasons upon which I extended my settlements into the north part of the island, are founded upon the assurance, that I should trade with people less prejudiced against the French. I have always considered it to be the intention of the minister, in sending me to form an establishment, that I should civilize the Madagascar nation, and form alliances with them, by virtue of which the French  
would

would enjoy the advantages of commerce, and assistance in favour of their settlements in India, in case of war; and I have directed my operations accordingly. I cannot, even at this time, think that the intention of his Majesty and his minister was such, as could lead them to expect me to act in any other manner. I have done my duty; and I can venture, on this occasion, gentlemen, to assure you, that my proceedings have been such, as would have been adopted and pursued by any other person who was jealous of the reputation of his Sovereign, under whom he served, and of the nation, whose arms he had the honour to bear.

#### A R T I C L E XXII.

What in general are the productions of this immense island; and what are the speculations of trade, and the objects of importation, which might reasonably be attended to without excess, and with that prudence and wisdom which are necessary to prepare and determine the fate of every enterprize?

#### *Answer to* A R T I C L E XXII.

As a military man, I have considered, that the island of Madagascar, civilized and attached to the interests of France, might have been advantageously recurred to in the construction of vessels, and to supply the other colonies with provisions; that its population being at length augmented, it might become a source of supplies for war; which, being in the neighbourhood of India, and the most extensive possessions of the English and other nations, would serve to keep them in respect. The islanders are accustomed to navigation;

tion ; might be employed on board merchant vessels ; and when, by different voyages, they had become capable of serving as mariners, in the navigation to and from India, and in the Indian seas, they would afford certain and necessary means for the preservation of the Europeans.

With regard to the present trade, it consists of rice, slaves, and cattle, wood in planks, with benzoin ; these may now be exported. If in future the Europeans or Malabar colonists, transported into the island, should exert themselves to profit by the riches which nature presents, several other branches of trade would be opened, such as sugar, indigo, tobacco, cotton, silk, wax, &c. The truth concerning Madagascar, is, that the commerce is real, and subsists already ; nothing more being wanted but the means of securing its extent. The merchant affirms, that his Majesty need only abandon the trade to individuals, and that emulation and exportation will increase the culture of the land, and encourage the natives of the country ; so that by this means only, subsistence and riches will be secured. He thinks himself in the right, but considers himself only, because he is interested in the duration of his personal trade, which may last a certain number of years, and he cares for nothing further. Speculating reasoners will say, that it is best to proceed gently ; then the most difficult enterprizes may be accomplished by mildness ; that, by forming small establishments, under favour of the treaties of the merchants and others, we may succeed in gaining entirely the confidence of the natives ; and that by this means the small colony will be augmented, and will at length become numerous, and as large as may be wished, without fatiguing the state by expences, or by any perceptible loss of men. These reasoners likewise suppose themselves to be in the right.

The

The first, and the second of these projects, must be established upon toleration, the event of which is always unfortunate. I therefore leave it to you, gentlemen commissaries, to decide what part ought to be taken, in these circumstances, by a chief to whom an enterprize of this nature was entrusted, and who is sent to form an establishment in the most convenient manner.

### A R T I C L E XXIII.

Have any mines of iron, copper, or other metals been found at the bay of Antongil, or its environs? What are the interesting vegetables, or medicinal plants, which may be useful for our islands of France and Bourbon?

Does the country afford wood proper for ship-building, or to be used in dying?

What are the roots and oils of the country? What means are there of establishing to advantage, upon the coast, the fishery of whales, which are abundant in the neighbouring seas?

#### *Answer to* ARTICLE XXIII.

Ores of iron and copper are found, at the bay of Antongil; gold dust at the head of Angonaw; silver at Angontzi; crystal at Mananhar. But with respect to vegetables, I cannot venture to make any assertion, on account of my total ignorance of botany.

The country affords wood, very proper for building ships, or for masts of vessels: dying woods likewise grow here; the blacks use them to dye yellow, blue, black, red, green, &c. As to resins, they have arant, detamaca, and vohinata. The blacks make oil from the whale and the manata, or sea cow. The whale fishery will be al-

ways disadvantageous on the coast, unless a settlement be formed at St. Mary, sufficiently provided with vessels and men destined to this employ; but I consider a settlement at that place as impossible.

#### A R T I C L E XXIV.

Where are the remarks and observations of the Baron de Benyowsky upon the navigation of the bay of Antongil! Do the south winds prevail here, as at the isle of France? Are they contrary to the passing of vessels out of the bay of Antongil? What time do vessels usually require to pass from this bay to fort Dauphin, on the southern part of the island?

Has the Baron sent persons by sea to examine the northern part of the island of Madagascar?

Has any safe harbour been discovered?

What are the navigable rivers of the island, and their situation?

Is the country subject to hurricanes or tempests?

#### *Answer to* ARTICLE XXIV.

The winds from south-east to south-west prevail from the month of March to the 15th of Sept. and sometimes to the end of the month; after which the winds from north-east, north-north-west and west prevail; but in the bay there is usually a land sea breeze, during the course of the twenty-four hours: the sea breeze begins to blow at eight, nine, or ten in the morning, and ceases at six, seven, or eight in the evening; and at eleven at night the land breeze usually springs up, by favour of which vessels can almost always go out of the bay? observing that, on the first day after weighing, the islands of Bats may be doubled, where they may anchor at the setting in of the sea breeze;

or

or if the pilot is sure of his vessel, he may turn to windward in the bay. In the evening they may again set sail, and may get out the next day, at a certainty. By the observation I have made, in twenty-two voyages, of vessels which have failed out of the bay, none of them required more than four or five days for that purpose, except the Grand Bourbon, which was three months in getting out, though several vessels failed from hence while the commander amused himself in sailing from one side of the harbour to the other. I am ignorant whether this was the fault of the vessel, or of the captain; or whether it was in consequence of certain orders which Mr. Maillart gave him, to execute none of my commissions.

In order to sail to fort Dauphin, it is necessary to take advantage of the winds which blow between September and May. The usual passage, after quitting the bay, is four days. In the contrary season, it takes sometimes twenty-two, or twenty-five days, but no more than six or seven days to return.

I have sent people to explore the island, both to the southward and northward. Two harbours were discovered to the northward, the one at Angontzi, and the other at Voemar. To the southward there is only the anchoring place at Foul Point, and the road of Tamatava. The most considerable river in the north part of the island, is that of Tingballe, upon which the chief settlement is established. It is navigable for small boats, and the boats of the country. Voemar, and Louque to the northward, are likewise navigable for the vessels of the country. This island is exempt from hurricanes.

ARTICLE

## ARTICLE XXV.

Lastly, what are the reflections of M. the Baron de Benyowsky upon the pernicious influence of the air, during the winter, more especially at the bay of Antongil, and upon the coast? We pray that he will give us a memoir at large, upon this very essential point, which deserves the utmost consideration, on account of its tendency to preserve the lives of his Majesty's subjects.

The experience he has acquired, and the considerable number of men he has lost at this place, during the three years following the establishment of the settlement, must have fixed his ideas as well with regard to the precaution necessary to be taken, and the means of preserving them.

Do the people who are found on the sea coasts during the healthy season, take refuge in the interior part of the island during the unhealthy season, to avoid the pernicious influence of the air? When they remain on the sea coasts during the unhealthy season, do they experience the same disorders as the Europeans? It is in consequence of these considerations, which are of the greatest importance to the success of the views that may be entertained by Government, that we demand of M. the Baron de Benyowsky, what inconveniences would arise from the formation of a solid establishment, during the whole year, upon the peninsula of Tamatava;—the country is wholesome, situated in the centre of the eastern coast, where the greatest abundance of rice, cattle, and slaves, may be furnished from all parts;—in this case, would it not be sufficient to send, during the healthy season, managers of the trade to Poul Point, to the bay

bay of Antongil, and principally to fort Dauphin, and to give the preference to Tamatava, as a place for the chief settlement?

Moreover, whatever place may appear to the Baron de Benyowsky as deserving the preference to form the establishment of a colony, admitting it to be healthy in itself, and during the whole year, we demand to be informed, what would be the forces, the means, and the expences to be made by Government, during the ten first years, and what would be the advantages which the nation would afterwards derive from thence.

We will carry this question and reasoning still further. If the minister and chiefs of the administration of the isle of France, had acceded to all the demands which the Baron de Benyowsky has made, since his arrival in Madagascar, whether of men or money, or articles of trade, or any other supplies whatever; what advantages would the nation have derived from thence? It has already made efforts, which, for the first four years, 1773, 1774, 1775, and 1776, may amount to more than one million five hundred thousand livres; we demand and request that he will demonstrate to us, what useful purpose has been answered by the employment of these first advances, or what success in future may be hoped for from the disbursement of such a considerable sum?

We are well convinced, that no person can better fill a charge of so delicate a nature than the Baron de Benyowsky; in the performance of which, it is necessary that all the qualities which he possesses should be united, in order to discharge the duties, and support the settlement, in the manner he has hitherto done. But the experience of the past, cannot but have enlightened his knowledge, and ad-

ded to the force of his mind: it is from the one and the other of these, that we expect that display of true information, which must fix the views of Government, the minister, and his Majesty.

At the bay of Antongil, at the island of Madagascar, September 20, 1776.

*Answer to* ARTICLE XXV.

Having addressed to the minister, conformably to his orders, an extract of my reflections upon the disorders of this country, I have now the honour to present a copy (annexed) of the same to you.

The natives of the island usually pass the unhealthy season in the interior part of the island. The people of the interior parts, when they arrive at the sea coast, are attacked by fevers, as well as the Europeans, but they are exempt from them at a distance from the coast. The establishment formed and concentrated according to my principles, would suffer the following inconveniences:

The road of Tamatava being dangerous for shipping, does not offer them the necessary shelter, and they would always run great risks, because the natives of these countries, being surrounded by enemies, would soon engage the settlement in their quarrels. For the establishment being present, and interested in the possession of the neighbouring territories, could not remain neutral; and its declaration in favour of the other side, would engage the establishment in a war, which could not fail of alienating the minds of their neighbours. Hiavi, first chief of Foul Point, seeing the preference given to Tamatava, would be one of the first to excite continual disorders, which would interrupt cultivation,

cultivation, and reduce the settlement to the want of necessaries. The Betalimenes, a numerous people at their ease, and enemies to all the other nations of these countries, who are the richest in flocks of cattle, would no longer dare to approach Tamatava, for fear either of Fariavas, or Hiavi. Lastly, the communication with the other posts would be very difficult, the road being overflowed at every new and full moon, by a high sea, and hurricanes, for near six days. Vessels at anchor, which would often be obliged to put out to sea, and would be driven by the current, could not regain the road, in some cases, in less than fifteen days. This circumstance, together with the difficulty of quitting the road, which is always dangerous, renders it absolutely impossible to fix the establishment of the chief settlement at Tamatava. The best that can be done, is to establish a factory, dependant on Foul Point: it would be of advantage, on account of the confluence of the natives, accustomed to the commerce of slaves, cattle and rice. The salubrity of Tamatava, compared with that of Foul Point, makes no great difference; besides, the commissioners having judged on the one side respecting Tamatava, by themselves, and on the other, by considering my reflections on these subjects, may easily decide respecting this affair.

With regard to that paragraph of the present article, which begins with the words, "Moreover, whatever place may appear to the Baron de Benyowsky as deserving the preference," &c. in which the commissaries propose the question, What would be the forces and expences to be furnished by Government, during the first ten years; and afterwards, what would be the advantages which the nation would derive from thence—I have the honour to represent, that, in order to enable me to answer this question, it is necessary that I should have been previously apprized of the final decision  
of

of his Majesty, respecting the establishment at Madagascar. If the intention of his Majesty be, that the entire dominion of this island shall be the fruits of an establishment; or if the views of a general trade should interfere with the plan of the establishment, which by its nature will transform itself into a colony: or, lastly, if the mere subsistence of the isles of France and Bourbon, is to be the profit— Upon the first plan I cannot hazard an opinion; for former examples are sufficient to overthrow every violent enterprize upon the Madagascar nation. Besides which, the treaties and alliances I have formed with this nation, by order of his Majesty, forbids me from infringing them. I shall therefore proceed to the second.

To carry it into execution, as far as my knowledge extends, the following is my answer. If his Majesty, after supplying six hundred men, supported by a recruit of two hundred men at the end of each of the two following years, with permission to chuse husbandmen in the troop, and allowing them to marry with the women of the country, without any restraint on account of religion; and permitting me to import, annually, two hundred foundlings, of the age of twelve or fourteen years, and likewise Malabar and Chinese families from India; in this case, I say, Madagascar would at the end of three years form a colony, which, thus connected with the whole island of Madagascar, would begin to have some value. The expence would not exceed one million per year, except the additional expence of two vessels, one of six hundred, and the other of two hundred tons, fitted out by his Majesty, in order that the charge might not fall upon the colony; and also of six galliots, for the necessary communication of the posts and transports.

This,

This, then, is the plan of the forces, means, and expences to be made during three years, at the end of which the colony of Madagascar would support itself, and increase by the product of its principal, or united capital of three millions, until the tenth year, at which period it would be found to be a well established colony, sufficiently strong to be in no fear of a sudden revolution, and in a situation to reimburse, by the product of its commerce, the advances which might have been made.

To the paragraph which begins with the words, "We will carry this question and reasoning still further," &c. I have the honour to reply, that if his Majesty had granted me the supplies which I demanded, and the isle of France had answered my requests, Madagascar\*—the cultivation would have been increased, and the different departments of commerce explored, with national advantages. Lastly, the glory of his Majesty, in civilizing a whole nation, would have indemnified the sacrifice: and this nation, reckoned among the number of his allies, would have increased the force of his power.

Messrs. the commissaries, in consequence of information furnished at the isle of France, have valued the sum expended during the four first years, 1773, 1774, 1775, and 1776, at one million five hundred thousand livres. I must entreat them to be pleased to determine the true expences, by inspecting the balance of my account, and make a just comparison of the representation drawn up at the isle of France, by selecting the sums which were really employed for the formation of the establishment, and by separating them from those which are

\* Here is a blank of one line and a half in the manuscript, which the Count had not filled up.

either

either pretended, or exaggerated. Besides this, as I have had the honour to present the receipts to the commissaries, by a former article, I think it unnecessary to repeat the state of the accounts.

Lastly, to shew the utility resulting from the application of the first advances, or what may be the supplies to be hoped for in future, I have the honour to represent to the commissaries, that having always directed my observations to the formation of the settlement, I have rendered it subordinate to the plan of securing the confidence of the natives of the country; and that commerce never entered into my views, but as an accessory, because I considered the national riches to arise from the product of the cultivation of a territory, the property of which I shall secure to Government; that the works which I have executed, to render the spot which I have chosen healthful, were indispensably necessary, as well as the communication and establishment of the different roads, and enquiries concerning the interior part of the country, to direct the subsequent operations; and moreover, that as all these parts of my operations tend only to the same fixed purpose, which forms the basis of the whole, I admit that the greatest part of these expences will be pure loss, if the minister thinks proper to support the plan of conquering Madagascar; for the only consequence which will result from such an undertaking, will consist in the loss of men and money, uselessly thrown away.

For my own personal justification, and in order that I may have nothing to reproach myself with, I once more repeat my pressing request to the commissaries, that they will be pleased to read the instructions of the minister respecting my mission, and then I hope they will be convinced, that I have done nothing but what my duty and my zeal required me to do.

After

After having replied at length to the commissaries' questions, proposed to me by order of his Majesty, I take the liberty to represent to them, that in the present situation of the establishment, and in case his Majesty shall have deferred his final decision respecting the establishment, until the accounts come forward to him, no other means will remain in my power, than to secure the chief place, and its dependencies, by a suitable provision for the subsistence of the troops, which will be necessary, until the receipt of his Majesty's orders, and to suspend all the works whatever, which may occasion expence; and in this position to wait for the period which may determine the fate of the establishment at the bay of Antongil.

At the island of Madagascar, Sept. 22, 1776.

#### OBSERVATIONS

## OBSERVATIONS UPON THE DISORDERS

OF THE

## ISLAND OF MADAGASCAR.

---

UPON my arrival on this island, by his majesty's orders, to form a settlement, the success of which must naturally depend on the preservation of the people, I immediately applied my attention to acquire a perfect knowledge of the disorders of the country, which had been described to me as very dreadful. But after all the enquiries I have made of surgeons, who frequented the island of Madagascar, I find myself disappointed in my expectations. Out of sixteen, whom I have consulted, there were not two who agreed respecting the cause of the disorder, or the treatment of patients. The object of their voyages having been always that of trade, they embarrassed themselves very little with this important affair, to which they ought to have paid the most serious attention. The informations which, on the other hand, I have received from the natives of the country, have not led me to any discovery concerning the nature of the disorder; though I think myself indebted to their method of treatment, which preserved my life, and that of my family.

Time

Time and experience therefore, alone, could give some information, which I have committed to writing, with the hope that my discoveries and observations might engage Government to cause them to be discussed, followed, and authorized, if they should be thought worthy of attention.

Here follow the OBSERVATIONS.

Every European, upon his arrival at Madagascar, who has not resided in hot climates, will be seized by the fevers of the country. The attack is more or less violent, according to the constitution of the individual, and they are retarded more or less, as well as attended with greater or less danger, according to the dryness or moisture of the place of settlement. This observation is grounded on,

1st. That out of three hundred and sixty-seven men, who came to Madagascar under my command, no more than fifty escaped the fevers of the country; and these men had been long inured to hot climates, by a considerable time of residence at Bengal.

2dly. There was no person of a full habit who did not experience burning fevers, followed by ravings, from which most of those who were of a strong constitution were exempt.

3dly. The fevers, after our arrival in 1773 and 1774, made considerable ravages. The men who had newly landed at Louisbourg, which was in the midst of a marsh, scarcely held up six months before they were attacked, and in general fatally. In the year 1775, after the greatest part of the marshes had been drained, the new-comers withstood the action of the climate for seventeen months, and were then attacked with less force. In this situation the sick did not suffer those dreadful ravings, followed by convulsions, and the mortality became essentially less numerous. The following

following year, 1776, was even more favourable; the fevers were of the usual appearance, and without any dangerous symptoms: I can venture to place them actually in the number of those which all hot and moist climates occasion.

The usual method of treatment adopted by the surgeons, in the fever, at Madagascar, is the following:

As soon as the first violence of the attack is over, they give a dose of emetic (tartar); the following day they give ipecacuanha, and afterwards quinquina and ptisan, until the fifth crisis. The patient at this period usually was in a lethargic drowsiness, and continual delirium, which gave way with difficulty to the application of blisters. Experience has unfortunately shewn that this treatment carried two-thirds of the patients to their grave. It was happy for those whose constitutions were strong enough to withstand this treatment for eight days, because the surgeons, at that period, gave them up to the course of nature, which very often produced better effects.

My own private observations are these:

When the Europeans first land at Madagascar, they have a strong appetite, and devour both animal and vegetable food indiscriminately, at the same time that their drink is nothing but lemonade. They are, besides, exposed to great heat, and breathe a moist air, occasioned by the exhalations of the marshes, and the mists or fogs, which arise from the rivers and woods. In this situation they are subject to continual sweats, which at length weakens the radical moisture, which is so necessary to digestion. Hence arise those indigestions, which are so common in this climate, and produce convulsions on the slightest suppression of transpiration, which at length being dissipated in vapours, produce the most violent head-aches, most commonly attended

attended with a dreadful delirium. The appetite is then lost, and gives place to a continual disposition to vomit, attended with a violent sensation of burning in the brain; the fever succeeds these symptoms, and is more or less violent, according to the constitution of the individual, or the nature of the place. As I found, from experience, that the treatment of the surgeons usually carried the patients to their grave, I availed myself of another method, in my own particular case, and that of my family, which was copied from the method of treatment adopted by the islanders; excepting only that I made use of theriaca to excite sweats, which they bring on by bathing, or by the use of simples, which are produced in the country. The method is as follows:

At the first indication of the head-ache, a dose of theriaca must be administered, and the patient must be kept warm, in a room with a fire in it, in order to re-establish the transpiration. The next day bleed in the foot, and on the third day purge with pure manna: afterwards the patient must every evening take a dose of confection of hyacinth, or some other cordial, and during the continuance of the disorder no other nourishment is to be given to the patient but soup and fresh eggs. It is to this simple treatment that I am indebted for my own life, and for the lives of most of those who have had the honour to serve his majesty in this colony.

REMARKS on the means which I apprehend to be the most proper to prevent, and even to extirpate entirely, the disorders to which the Europeans are subject in this country.

First, the use of boiled flesh must be entirely forbidden to all who have recently arrived; and their nourishment must be confined to soup and roast

meat, with rice. It is likewise proper to forbid them the use of lemons, and to substitute vinegar in their stead. An allowance of some strong liquor ought to be distributed morning and evening to every soldier, or workman, for the three first years, in order to preserve them from the bad air occasioned by the vapours of the marshes, and the fogs which arise from the rivers and the woods.

Care must be taken to elevate the houses in which they reside, in order that the circulation of air may be facilitated. Fire-places, likewise, should be built in them, to rarify the internal air, particularly during the night, when it is usually moist and cold.

The rest of the marshes near the settlements ought to be drained: this business is already done in part, and the rest may soon be finished, provided Government shall think proper to make the necessary exertions and expence.

The place where posts or villages are proposed to be established, within the island, ought to be at a distance from the rice plantations; and the places ought to be cleared six months before they are inhabited, that the putrid exhalations, which I have observed to abound upon newly cleared lands, may have time to dissipate.

Experience has shewn me, that the time of planting was the sickly season; and likewise that the posts established in the uncleared woods, enjoyed a wholesome air, and were not attacked with fevers.

The men ought not to be employed in the works, until the sun has dissipated the vapours and fogs, which arise from the marshes; for the heat is less pernicious than the morning exhalations.

The cultivation of red rice, which grows only in the marshes, ought to be abolished throughout Madagascar. The islanders, in order to procure  
this

this grain with less trouble, make cuts in the month of December, which convey the water into the ground they design to plant. They keep the ground under water, until it has acquired the consistence of a bog, at which time they turn in a flock of cattle, to divide the soil by their feet, after which they sow the rice. It shoots up in a very short time, and is again covered with water as soon as it is in the blade; which water they leave to evaporate spontaneously. In many parts of the island they save themselves the trouble of digging canals, and making banks round the fields, by entirely damming up the rivers, and causing them by that means to overflow their grounds. This is a very common circumstance upon the coast; it is not, therefore, unworthy of credit, that this method of cultivation may be enough to poison a whole country, and that the salubrity would be restored by abolishing it. It may be objected, that, by depriving the inhabitants of this method of cultivation, a great part of their productions would be taken away; but those who make this objection, know very little of Madagascar, because the cultivation of red rice amounts, at the utmost, to no more than one-fourth of their whole product; and the other three-fourths of white-rice does not grow in the marshes, but upon the high grounds. And could not this loss be made up, by introducing the cultivation of wheat, and the use of the plough?

From my own experience, I am convinced that corn, barley, and oats, will thrive perfectly well here, and more especially maize.

REFLECTIONS  
UPON THE  
PROJECT OF A COLONY AT MADAGASCAR,  
IN CASE ANY POWER SHOULD ADOPT  
THE SYSTEM OF CIVILIZATION,  
FOUNDED ON THE  
BASIS OF AN ALLIANCE.

*An Estimate of the Importation of Men, and of the Population.*

AS the colony of Madagascar may be establish-  
ed in ten years, by means of an advance of  
three millions of livres; it will have consumed  
near eighteen hundred men during these ten years,  
supposing that seven hundred and twenty military  
were sent the first year; two hundred men for each  
of the two following years; one hundred and fifty  
for each of the seven following years; and that  
during the whole ten years, one year with another,  
there be imported one hundred and twenty Eu-  
ropean husbandmen, thirty creoles, and fifty na-  
tives, either of India, China, or from the coast of  
Malabar. The whole importation will amount to  
four thousand one hundred and seventy men: this  
number

number will annually produce six hundred children, the total of which, at the end of the tenth year, will amount to six thousand creoles, and three thousand three hundred and seventy Europeans; a sufficient number to fix the epoch of a colony.

### C O M M E R C E.

Madagascar, in its present state, can consume three hundred thousand pieces of cloth, three thousand casks of brandy, at twenty-five veltes, twenty thousand musquets, one hundred and sixty thousand pounds of gunpowder, six hundred thousand knives, one hundred thousand looking glasses, fifteen thousand pieces of handkerchiefs, five thousand pieces of chintz, patnas, gingham, &c. a large quantity of pottery, instruments, and tools of copper, iron, and tin; slight cloths of gold and silver, fine cloths, galloons, gold and silver laces; and this trade must produce to me, during the first and second year, a profit of one million four hundred and sixty-nine thousand pounds, all expences deducted, which in French money amounts to seven million eight hundred and sixty-nine thousand seven hundred and fifty livres.

In exchange for these merchandizes, the articles received will be skins, timber, and dying woods; gums, wax, honey, &c. And this trade of barter will in a short time increase, by affording coffee, indigo, sugar, pepper, and silk; and in the mean time, the advantage of one hundred per cent. will be constantly gained on the exchange of the value of seven million eight hundred and sixty-nine thousand seven hundred and fifty livres. The property of these first merchandizes will open branches of commerce with Mozambique, Mascat, Bassora,

and

and Surat; and these last imports will be always valuable in Europe, especially the indigo, which is of the best kind and quality. In a word, Madagascar, with her own productions, joined to assortments of those of Europe, will carry on the most advantageous trade to all the parts beyond the Cape, and will support her connection with Europe by virtue of her own productions.

#### REVENUES *of the* STATE.

The principal settlement of Madagascar will receive, during the first year, the revenue of the different provinces, consisting of four thousand oxen, one million three hundred thousand pounds of rice, two hundred and fifty thousand madriers or thick plants, fifteen thousand planks, and one hundred and eighty boats of the country; the whole valued at four hundred and thirty-eight thousand livres. This tribute will necessarily augment, as the peopling and cultivation of the land shall increase; so that it may, without any exaggeration, be set down at one million three hundred and sixty thousand livres for the third year.

#### INCREASE *of the* CULTIVATION *by the* COLONISTS *and* EUROPEANS.

This establishment, after the third year, will have formed one hundred and fifty European habitations, and the people will supply sixteen million pounds of sugar, five hundred thousand pounds of coffee, six million pounds of tobacco, five hundred thousand pounds of cotton, and five million pounds of grain; one-tenth of which, passing into the public treasury, will amount to three hundred and five thousand livres. From the third to the tenth year, these habitations will increase,

crease, and consequently the product will be more considerable, especially when manufactories of cotton and silk shall have been established.

Every power allied to Madagascar will, moreover, enjoy the superior advantage, that, instead of exporting specie to India, to pass in the course of circulation into the hands of their rivals, they may purchase the necessary merchandize of their friends and allies, in exchange for the products of their own industry.

### M I N E S.

The Island of Madagascar, abounding with mines of iron and copper, and having plenty of wood, offers likewise the advantage of furnishing these articles for the trade to India, the Persian Gulph, and the Red Sea.

### MARINE *and* NAVIGATION.

As Madagascar abounds with the best kind of wood for building, and affords resins and hemp of her own growth, and moreover possesses the advantage of excellent harbours, it offers every convenience for ship building. The islanders are very much disposed to navigation, and are accustomed to the sea by their own coasting trade; they will therefore be of the greatest service, after the first year, on board trading vessels in the Indian seas; and when become more skilful, they may be employed on board the King's ships. There is no one that will not readily perceive the considerable advantage of this circumstance, as well in the preservation of the European sailors, as in the facility of completing the crews of fleets of men of war, which are often under the necessity of abandoning their enterprizes for want of men. The island of Madagascar will, in a word, afford an asylum for shipping,

shipping, will become a place of building and fitting out, and will be the general magazine for the subsistence of the fleets, and possessions of its protectors, beyond the Cape of Good Hope.

*The* STATE *of* DEFENSIVE WAR.

The extent of the island of Madagascar does not require a mass of fortifications of the first order: the first posts may be defended by simple works, intended only to cover the inhabitants from an unexpected landing. An enemy can never land so large a number as to drive them out of the country. I will even take upon me to say, that, at the tenth year after the formation of the establishment, the greatest forces which may be sent, will be unable to maintain their footing in any part of the island; and the result of their enterprizes will, in the end, be always reduced to considerable expences and loss.

I will take upon me to affirm, positively, that the island of Madagascar, after the expiration of the third year, will keep on foot upwards of twenty thousand fighting men, of infantry, well regulated and disciplined; and these twenty thousand men, led on by intelligent officers, will greatly exceed in force the small number of fatigued and exhausted Europeans, which might be sent to attack them. The experience I have acquired in this island, has convinced me, that the natives of Madagascar are as eminent for good principles and valour, when free, as they are for timidity and baseness when reduced to slavery.

The Madagascar people are naturally disposed in favour of the Europeans, and attach themselves to us with sincerity. If they are convinced, that by alliances they can secure equality of conditions, and the possession of their property, it will  
soon

soon be seen that these islanders, confounded among the new inhabitants, will form but one people.

To obviate the objection which might be made, that all the different attempts to form establishments upon this island, for the course of a century past, have been attended with the most unhappy consequences, and that the present establishment upon the island might run the same risk; I answer, that the settlement will have nothing to fear, as long as the national chief maintains the prohibition of the slave trade; and that the Europeans, on their arrival, do not themselves raise disturbances, but endeavour to preserve the people from slavery. I have examined the conduct of the French officers, who were formerly entrusted with the conduct of the different enterprizes upon this island, and I am convinced that their avidity led them to injustice and oppression, which was the source of the misfortunes, that ended in the destruction of the ancient establishments. They were usurpers, and tyrants; who, with a view to increase their private fortunes, did not blush to attack the liberty of a people, to whom they ought to have been bound by the ties of gratitude.

#### *The STATE of OFFENSIVE WAR.*

The island of Madagascar will victual the squadrons of the power to whom she shall be attached; will furnish sailors, who will serve better in hot climates than Europeans; and will likewise afford men to be employed in the military service, as light troops. This people being able to subsist upon rice and beef, the natural product of their island, will be less expensive in their subsistence; and being inured to hot climates, they will be more able to support fatigue in the temperature of India.

Those

Those who have served in India, inform us that the English surpass the French, by the number of Indians they keep in pay. But will any one presume to make a comparison between those feeble Indians, who have no idea of glory, and the free people of Madagascar, led by affection and attachment to support the cause of their allies, who have become their brothers and friends?—I can confidently predict, that the decided superiority which any power may acquire in India, will depend upon its connection with the island of Madagascar.

( 331 )

S U P P L E M E N T,

T O

S E R V E A S A S E Q U E L

T O T H E

M E M O I R S C O N C E R N I N G M A D A G A S C A R.

---

*The Faith of the Madagascar Nation.*

**T**HE Madagascar nation believes in a Supreme Being, whom they call Zanhare, which denotes Creator of all things. They honour and revere this Being, but have dedicated no temple to him, and much less have they substituted idols. They make sacrifices, by killing oxen and sheep, and they address all these libations to God. It has been asserted, that this nation likewise makes offerings to the Devil; but in this there is a deception, for the piece of the sacrificed beast, which is usually thrown into the fire, is not intended in honour of the Devil, as is usually pretended. This custom is very ancient, and no one can tell the true reason of it. With regard to the immortality of the soul, the Madagascar people are persuaded, that,

that, after their death, their spirit will return again to the region in which Zanhare dwells; but they by no means admit that the spirit of man, after his death, can suffer any evil. As to the distinction of evil, or good, they are persuaded that the good and upright man shall be recompensed, in this life, by a good state of health, the constancy of his friends, the increase of his fortunes, the obedience of his children, and the happiness of beholding the prosperity of his family: and they believe that the wicked man's fate shall be the contrary to this. The Madagascar people, upon this conviction, when they make oaths, add benedictions in favour of those who keep them, and curses against those who break them. In this manner it is that they appeal to the judgment of Zanhare, in making agreements; and it has never been known, or heard of, that a native of Madagascar has broken his oath, provided it was made in the usual manner, which they say was prescribed by their forefathers.

*Distinction of Kings, and Orders, which form the Government of the Country.*

The Madagascar people have always acknowledged the line of Ramini, as that to which the rights of Ampanfacabe, or Sovereign, belongs. They have considered this line as extinct, since the death of Dian Ramini Larizon, which happened sixty-six years ago, and whose body was buried upon a mountain, out of which the river Manangourou springs; but having acknowledged the heir of this line, on the female side, they re-established this title in the year 1776. The right of the Ampanfacabe consists, in nominating the Rohandrians to assist in the cabars, at which all those who are cited are bound to appear, and the judgment of  
the

the Ampanfacabe, in his cabar, is decisive. Another prerogative of the Ampanfacabe is, that each Rohandrian is obliged to leave him, by will, a certain proportion of his property, which the successors usually purchase by a slight tribute, or fine. Thirdly, the Ampanfacabe has a right to exact from each Rohandrian, one tenth of the produce of his land, and a number of horned cattle and slaves, in proportion to the riches of the country possessed by each Rohandrian.

The second order is composed of the Rohandrians, or Princes. Since the loss of the Ampanfacabe, three of these Rohandrians have assumed the title of Kings—namely, the Rohandrian of the province of Mahavelou, named Hiavi; of the province of Voemar, named Lambouin; and the third at Bombetoki, named Cimanounpou.

The third order consists of the Voadziri, or lords of a district, composed of several villages.

The fourth order consists of the Lohavohits, or chiefs of the villages.

The fifth order, Ondzatzzi, who are freemen, and compose the attendants or followers of the Rohandrians, Voadziri, or Lohavohits.

The sixth order consists of Ombiaffes, or learned men; and this order forms the warriors, workmen, physicians, and diviners: these last possess no charge.

The seventh order consists of Ampourias, or slaves. Having made enquiries from Bombetoki passing to the northward, and as far as Itapere, the result proved, that there are thirty-eight Rohandrians actually reigning, and two hundred and eighty-seven Voadziri. With respect to the Lohavohits, Ondzatzzi, and Ombiaffes, it was not possible to obtain any accurate determination of their number.

These orders preserve a regular gradation, respecting which it would be very difficult to give a detailed account. They live in the manner we

read

read of concerning the ancient patriarchs. Every father of a family is priest and judge in his own house, though he depends upon the Lohavohits, who superintend his conduct. This last is answerable to his Voadziri, and the Voadziri to the Rohandrian.

*The Conveniences of Life, and the State of the Weather.*

The natives of Madagascar subsist on their flocks of oxen, sheep, and goats, which they maintain, together with poultry, of which they keep a vast quantity. Their houses are constructed of wood, but are very convenient, and wonderfully neat within-side. Their villages are surrounded with pallisades and ditches, and the habitations of the Rohandrians are well fortified and defended by cannon. They have \* and slaves; they cultivate the earth with industry, and it affords rice, millet, maize, and pulse, in large quantities: the soil likewise produces sugar, tobacco, indigo, coffee, and pepper; and the land is not sold, but given away. Erections of buildings cost nothing more than the trouble of fetching the wood. The people of Madagascar have no reason to fear wild beasts, or venomous creatures, as there are none upon the island. Cold weather, frost, and snow, are unknown to them; and the hot weather is less troublesome here, than upon the islands which lie in the torrid zone, because the nights are cool, and the heat of the day lasts only from nine to three, during which time the sea

\* Blank in the Manuscript.

breeze prevails, and cools the air to such a degree, that it is seldom inconvenient. This heat lasts only four months, and during the rest of the year, one continued spring prevails.

The Madagascar people, having no communication with the main land of Æthiopia, have not altered their primitive laws; and the language throughout the whole extent of the island is the same. It would be a rash attempt to determine the origin of this nation; it is certain that it consists of three distinct races, who have for ages past formed intermixtures, which vary to infinity. The first race is that of Zafe Ibrahim, or descendants of Abraham; but they have no vestige of Judaism, except circumcision, and some names, such as Isaac, Reuben, Jacob, &c. This race is of a brown colour. The second race is that of Zaferamini: with respect to this, some books, which are still extant among the Ombiaffes, affirm, that it is not more than six centuries since their arrival at Madagascar; and as it is the only one concerning which I have met with any accounts, I shall proceed to give a short extract from that of the natives. With respect to the third race of Zafe Canambou, it is of Arabian extraction, and arrived much more lately than the others, from the coasts of Æthiopia: hence it possesses neither power nor credit, and fills only the charges of writers, historians, poets, &c. &c.

*The Origin of Zaferamini. Translated from the book  
Fassiri.*

Rahimini, father of Imina, the mother of Mahomet, had two sons, the elder of whom was named Ramini, and was a great prophet. He went to seek Mahomet, at Mecca, and Mahomet was astonished at the wisdom of Ramini; but as Ramini  
would

would not eat the flesh of beasts, unless he had himself cut the throat of the animal, he irritated the disciples of Mahomet, who intended to spill his blood, because he proposed to introduce a new custom. But Mahomet, inspired by God, prevented the blood of the prophet from being spilled, and permitted him to cut the throats of the beasts he eat; and some time afterwards gave him one of his daughters, named Farafatema, in marriage. Ramini went with his wife, his disciples, and slaves, to Mongalor, where he lived the rest of his life, and was an Ampanfaca. He had a son, named Rehaurorud, and a daughter Ramini, who married together, and had two sons, the elder of whom was Rahadzi, and the younger Racovatzi. Rahadzi succeeded his father, and was King of Mangalor. Rahadzi being desirous of seeing his native country, and visiting the tombs of his ancestors, at Palmir, equipped two vessels for the voyage; and, as he had not any children, he gave orders that, in case of his death, his brother should be chosen Ampanfaca in his place: but he was scarcely arrived, before a great man, named Ambouhor, inspired Racovatzi with the design of assuming the title of King, and governing the country. Racovatzi, being naturally ambitious, convened the great men, and declared that his brother was not gone to visit the tombs of his fathers, but to make an act of the profession of the law of Mahomet. Under this pretext he succeeded in his election; and out of all the great men, there remained only one, of the name of Amboulmaffe, faithful to Rahadzi, who followed his master to Palmir, where he informed him of the sad news of his brother's transaction. Rahadzi, seeing himself thus dethroned, took the resolution of proceeding to an unknown land; and after sailing three whole months with his

his ships, he arrived at the island of Comorro, which he found inhabited; and from whence he passed to Malacafs, and landed at Manghabey, where he was friendly received by the great men of the country. He married the daughter of a King, by whom he had two children, the elder of which, by his wisdom and the spirit of God, was chosen Ampanfacabe. This King, whose name was Ramini Azoringhetzi, had several children, amongst whom he divided the provinces; but as they made war one against the other, the Rohandrians, governors of the said provinces, declared themselves Princes and Sovereigns of the country, and massacred the children of their Ampanfacabe, except Ramini Tamere, who was then at the breast. It was to this Ramini Tamere that they preserved the title of Ampanfacabe; and the following are his descendants---his son Ramini Olive, from whom, in a regular series, issued Ramini Rohamado; Ramini Ragomin; Ramini Savatto; Ramini Panghare; Ramini Boamasse; Ramini Pangharzaffe; Ramini Bohitz; Ramini Tiffava; Ramini Ravohe: Ramini Nong; Ramini Arive.

The Ampanfacabe, Arive had four sons; one legitimate, and three by his concubines. Ramini Benoule was the Ampanfacabe by inheritance; the three others were Dian Maninpele, Dian Tzianban, and Dian Raval. These three conspired against their elder brother, and slew him; and as he had only one daughter, they availed themselves of the confusion to erect themselves into Rohandrians, and established themselves in the southern part of Malacasse; for the northern provinces, being determined to revenge the death of their Ampanfacabe, made war upon them, and drove them out. The daughter of Ramini Benoule, married Dian Mihale, Rohandrian of the provinces of Mananghar,

har, Antivoiezow, Antinokol, Antivohibey, Antimaroa, and these provinces elected and acknowledged Dian Mihale for their Ampanfacabe, giving him the name of Ramini Mihale. Ramini Mihale had a son, who succeeded him; and his immediate descendants were Ramini Lubeton; Ramini Cievi: Ramini Lontazou; Ramini Refidzimon; Ramini Ravalou; and Ramini Larizon, the last of this second race of Ramini: he was slain in a war with the Rohandrian Milouzou, of Mahavelou, who was assisted by the French. The Rohandrian Milouzou slew the two sons of Ramini Larizon upon his tomb, and preserved only his daughter, whom he sold to a Dutch merchant, who carried her beyond sea. At the death of King Larizon, the title of Ampanfacabe remained extinct.

The descendants of Dian Maninpele, Dian Tzi-anban, and Dian Raval, who were settled at Mananzari, Itapoule, and Matatana, received the French alternately in their dominions, and were exterminated by them, except the line Tzerone, who avenged his family by a general massacre of all the French in the country. Thus far proceeds the detail of the Faffiri, a book which the Ombiasses, of the race of Zaffecanimanbou, have composed; but as it is necessary to bring it down to our time, the following may be added:

In the year 1776, the Rohandrians Voadziri, and Lohavohits, were persuaded, that they had found a descendant of the daughter of Ampanfacabe, and entered into the oath of blood with him.

#### THE ARTS AND TRADES OF MADAGASCAR.

The Madagascar nations being in want only of the necessaries of life, have not applied themselves  
to

to the invention of so many arts and trades as are become indispensable in Europe. They are contented with such as are necessary to make their moveables, tools, utensils, and arms for defence; to construct their dwellings, and the boats, which are necessary for their navigation: and lastly, to fabricate cloths and stuffs for their cloathing. They are desirous only of possessing the necessary supplies of immediate utility and convenience.

The principal and most respected business, is the manufacture of iron and steel. The artists in this way call themselves *Ampanefa vihe*. They are very expert in fusing the ore, and forging utensils, such as hatchets, hammers, anvils, knives, spades, *fa-gayes*, razors, pincers, or tweezers for pulling out the hair, &c.

The second class consists of the Goldsmiths, *Ompanefa vola mena*: they cast gold in ingots, and make up bracelets, buckles, ear-rings, drops, rings, &c.

The third are called *Ompavillanga*, and are Potters.

The fourth are the *Ompanevatta*, or turners in wood, who make boxes called *vatta*, plates, wooden and horn spoons, bee-hives, coffins, &c.

The fifth, *Ompan cacafou*, or carpenters. They are very expert in this business, and make use of the rule, the plane, the compasses, &c.

The sixth are the *Ompaniavi*, or rope-makers. They make their ropes of different kinds of bark of trees, and likewise of hemp.

The seventh, *Ampan lamba*, or weavers. This business is performed by women only, and it would be reckoned disgraceful in a man to exercise it.

The *Ombiaffes* are the literary men and physicians, who give advice only.

The *Herauvitz* are comedians and dancers.

## THEIR DWELLING PLACES AND BUILDINGS,

The Madagascar people always live in society; that is to say, in towns and villages. The towns are surrounded by a ditch and palisades, at the extremities of which a guard of from twelve to twenty armed men is kept. The houses of private people consist of a convenient cottage, surrounded by several small ones: the master of the house dwells in the largest, and his women, or slaves, lodge in the smaller. These houses are built of wood, covered with leaves of the palm-tree, or straw.

The houses of the great men of the country are very spacious; each house is composed of two walls, and four departments: and round about the principal house, other smaller habitations are built, for the accommodation of the women, and the whole family of the chief; but the slaves cannot pass the night within them. Most of the houses inhabited by the Rohandrians, are built with taste, and admirable symmetry.

---

Here ends the THIRD VOLUME, according to the division made by the COUNT; and in this place he has written the following in French.

“End of the THIRD and LAST VOLUME,” with his cypher, or abridged signature, annexed; and underneath.

“I, the undersigned, do certify, that the present work, drawn out in three volumes, in twelve quires, is the true original.”

Signed,

“MAURICE AUGUSTE Cte De BENYOWSKY.

C O P I E S  
OF THE  
MINISTERIAL LETTERS OF FRANCE.  
OF  
THE OATH OF THE MADAGASCAR NATION,  
TO THE  
COUNT DE BENYOWSKY:

HIS ELECTION TO THE DIGNITY OF AMPANSACABE, HIS FULL  
POWER TO TREAT IN EUROPE, HIS DECLARATION MADE  
IN ENGLAND, AND HIS PROPOSALS TO THE  
ENGLISH GOVERNMENT.

---

Colonies. India Office. }

Copy of the principal  
piece relating to the ex-  
pedition to Madagaf-  
car. }

*Versailles, March 19, 1773.*

S I R,

**T**HE King, by attaching you to his service,  
is desirous of putting it in your power to  
give proofs of your zeal: in consequence of this  
disposition, his Majesty has made choice of you to  
form

form an establishment at Madagascar, which appears to him to be absolutely necessary, to procure the requisite supplies to the isle of France. This establishment may be productive of consequences of still greater moment, and more worthy of that zeal which animates you for the glory of the King. I cannot do better, in order to inform you of his Majesty's views, than to send you a copy of a letter, which I wrote by his order, to the Chevalier de Ternay and Maillart. It contains the instructions conformably to which you are to act. The correspondence which you will maintain with Messrs. De Ternay and Maillart, respecting the details of your operations, must not dispense you from rendering me a direct account of every step you may take for the success of the important and honourable mission his Majesty has been pleased to entrust to your care; and I beg that you will inform me of every thing relating thereto. I have the honour to be, very sincerely,

S I R,

Your most humble,

and most obedient servant,

To M. the Baron de Benyowsky.

DE BOYNES.

Copy

*Devo*

Colonies. India Office. }

N<sup>o</sup> E + E. Expedition }  
to Madagascar. }

*Copy of a Letter from M. De  
Boynes to Messrs. De Ter-  
nay and Maillart, dated  
March 19, 1773.*

**Y**OU are acquainted, gentlemen, with the project which Mr. De Maudave caused to be adopted in 1767, of forming a colony of Europeans at Madagascar, to civilize the inhabitants of that island, and accustom them to our manners and usages. It was soon perceived that this establishment was founded on false principles, and it was given up on account of the impossibility of affording the advances of every kind, which M. De Maudave required in favour of the new colonists.

Notwithstanding the bad success of this attempt, it cannot be disputed that the island of Madagascar contains very great resources, and that it would be useful to have an establishment there; but instead of a colony, the sight of which would too openly offend the rights of property, to be received with pleasure by a people composed of herdsmen and cultivators of the ground, nothing more ought to be attempted than a simple post, in favour of which, useful connections might be formed with the chiefs of the country, with whom a trade might be carried on in the way of barter, that would put an end to the abuse of purchasing with money. It will depend upon the abilities of  
the

the person to whom the care of this enterprize may be entrusted, to extend his connections into the internal parts of the island, by which new branches of trade may be opened; and it is from his prudent conduct that we may hope to arrive at the end proposed by M. De Maudave, and form a colony so much the more firmly established, as it will be founded on the interest of the islanders themselves, and the confidence they may have been inspired with. Lastly, while our views are confined to the carrying on a trade, as has hitherto been done, by dismissing every idea of dominion and sovereignty, it will always be of importance to have a fixed post to direct the operations of individuals, and maintain a just balance between them and the natives of the country. No person has appeared more capable of carrying his Majesty's intentions into effect, than M. Baron de Benyowsky. In the course of his travels by sea, he has learned the manner of treating with savage people; and to a great share of firmness, he has joined that mildness of character, which suits a design of this nature.

It is therefore the King's intention to send him to Madagascar, with the forces over which he has given him the command; leaving him at liberty to chuse the most convenient place for the establishment which his majesty has determined to form.

His majesty excepts only fort Dauphin, notwithstanding the salubrity of the air, because this part of the island is very dry, and possesses no commercial resources. It is pretended, that Tamatava, on the east coast, is the most proper place for an establishment; as well on account of the goodness of the harbour, as the disposition of the inhabitants; together with the fertility of the soil, and the supplies of every kind which it affords.

M. De

M. De Benyowsky will himself judge of these advantages; but in the uncertainty of the place where he may think proper to fix himself, it is indispensably necessary that he should have a small vessel, to run along the coast, and make every necessary search for insuring the success of the establishment he is charged to form. It is with this view that his majesty has purchased the brigantine the *Postillon*, which may be employed in transporting part of M. De Benyowsky's people to Madagascar, and may afterwards remain subject to his orders, with the *Sieur Saunier*. This officer has made several voyages to Madagascar, and is therefore qualified to assist the operations of M. De Benyowsky.

As to the rest, M. De Benyowsky will find every other assistance he may want, in his troops: they have been selected with the greatest care; are all strong and robust young men, of different trades, in order that M. De Benyowsky may not find any embarrassment in the works he may undertake. On the other hand, I have given orders to forward to you, tents as well for the officers as for the soldiers, that they may encamp wherever M. De Benyowsky may think proper, without injuring the inhabitants. M. De Benyowsky will employ the geographical engineer, who accompanies him, to make exact plans of the coast, with the courses of rivers, and maps of such interior parts of the island as he may have access to. The King has likewise appointed a surgeon, for the treatment of the sick, to whom M. Maillart may give an assistant; so that there will be no other persons wanting, but an officer of Administration, a storekeeper, a treasurer for the order and management of expences, and an almoner for spiritual service.

From the character which has been received of M. De Maissonville, he has been chosen to accompany

pany M. De Benyowsky, and perform the functions of commissary; and his majesty has been pleased, on this consideration, to grant him the brevet of sub-commissary. His majesty refers the choice of a treasurer and storekeeper to M. Maillart, and that of almoner to the apostolical prefect. M. Maillart will consider, whether one person may not have the charge of the cash and the stores.

Such is the plan, according to which the operations of M. De Benyowsky are to be conducted. It will occasion no extraordinary expence to the King, and will produce a real assistance to the isle of France, as the troops of M. De Benyowsky may be maintained much more easily and cheaply at Madagascar, than on the isle of France. As soon as M. De Benyowsky shall arrive in the colony, the Chevalier de Ternay shall supply him with recruits, which are designed for him, according to the lists drawn out at their embarkation, to be formed into a new troop, which M. De Benyowsky shall exercise; and you will be pleased afterwards to give him, upon his request, the necessary orders for transporting them to Madagascar, and disembarking them at the place which shall be determined upon by M. De Benyowsky.

Notwithstanding the necessity of abstaining, with the greatest care, from every attack upon the inhabitants of Madagascar; and though the express orders of M. De Benyowsky are to employ no other means with regard to them, but those of mildness and negotiation, and to maintain his people in the most exact discipline; yet it would not be prudent to expose him in the midst of those islanders, who are jealous of their liberty, and naturally restless and suspicious, without putting it in his power to repel any act of violence on their part.

The forces he may be supplied with, may likewise enable him to gain, with great facility, the confidence

confidence and friendship of such chiefs as may may have occasion to require his assistance in their own domestic quarrels.

He demands twelve pieces of cannon, six twelve-pounders, four eight-pounders, six peteraroes and two small mortars, with their bombs; five hundred granades, three barrels of gunpowder, one of battle powder, five hundred pounds weight of sulphur, and the same quantity of saltpetre, with four thousand weight of lead, and moulds for making bullets. You will see whether it be practicable, in the present situation of your stores, to deliver these articles to him. Some of these may be employed in his trade with the natives; and it would be of advantage that you should add, with the same intention, other articles equally sought after by the inhabitants of Madagascar, such as musquets, pistols, hatchets, nails, bars of iron, copper, some pieces of cloth; and, in general, every thing suitable to the trade. M. De Benyowsky will require, for his own use, a set of carpenter's and cabinet-maker's tools. The storekeeper, whom M. Maillart may chuse, shall charge himself with all these effects, and account for them in the usual form.

As it may be presumed, that it will be near the bad season of the year when M. De Benyowsky and his people may arrive at Madagascar, it will be of consequence to provide for the subsistence and payment of his troops, during the time in which they can hold no communication with the isle of France; M. Maillart will therefore remit a sufficient sum to the treasurer for six months pay, and provide the storekeeper with wine and brandy for the same time; together with flour, and salt provisions, for three months only, because resources of this last kind will not be wanting at Madagascar, as soon as they shall have fixed their establishment.

ment. Other articles of consumption may be afforded from the magazine, according to the tariff which you may draw up before the departure of M. De Benyowsky.

If this expedition be attended with the success, which there is reason to expect from the zeal and intelligence of M. De Benyowsky, it will procure very plentiful supplies to the isle of France; taking care, nevertheless, to prevent the ships of private traders from approaching that point of the island where M. De Benyowsky shall have settled, and to send only such vessels as are appointed to fetch the slaves and cattle, collected in consequence of the trade carried on on the King's account; and, at the same time, without suffering the officers who command these vessels to carry on any private trade. The orders of M. De Benyowsky are positive in this respect, and he is charged to see them put strictly into execution. By this means, the augmentation of price, which is produced by the concurrence of vessels, will be prevented, and an end will be put to the pernicious abuse of paying in money, by seizing those times when the islanders are in want of our merchandizes, which cannot be done by private vessels that sail along the coast, and aim at little more than to cover the expences of fitting out.

M. De Maisonville being empowered, in quality of Commissary, to direct all the operations of the commercial intercourse upon the King's account, at the place where M. De Benyowsky may settle, it is of importance that he should have with him a trusty person under his orders, with two interpreters, who may serve at the same time in the negotiations which M. De Benyowsky may enter into with the chiefs of the country.

M. De Maillart will please to be no less careful in the choice of these persons, than of the others, whose

whose nomination have been left to him; because their influence may equally affect the success of the views I have explained.

Of all the means which could be imagined to procure the necessary supplies to the isle of France, which are wanting to increase its cultivation and insure its subsistence, there are certainly none better adapted to the purpose, and at the same time less chargeable to the King; and his majesty depends upon your seconding the efforts of M. De Benyowsky with the greater earnestness, from the reflection, that if the continual residence at Madagascar should effect a happy revolution in the minds and manners of its inhabitants; and if success should follow the attempt to inspire them with a taste for our productions, our works, and our manufactures, a market will be formed at the isle of France for a trade which will be an abundant source of riches and prosperity. These motives ought to excite all your zeal; and you cannot act more agreeably to his majesty, than by restoring to the isle of France those resources, of which it has been deprived by the abuses which have crept into the trade of Madagascar, and by that means to clear it of its dependance on foreign colonies for subsistence. I have the honour to be, &c.

*Versailles,*

DE BENEDETTI

To Messrs. Paris de Benyowsky  
and M. Des...  
Paris

Colonies. India Office. }

Provisions.

*Versailles, July 2d, 1775.*

GENTLEMEN,

I Send you, by his majesty's corverte, La Sirene, an assortment of victualling stores, furnished by M. \_\_\_\_\_ to whom I have given a commission for that purpose.

This forms only a part of M. De Benyowsky's demand; but I propose to forward the rest by the ships which sail at the end of the year. M. Des Affizes, or the officer of Administration who may represent him, must be careful that the effects be carried to the storehouse, and duly acknowledged by a receipt from the storekeeper; after which they may be distributed in the colony, care being first taken to examine them by the invoice which accompanies this. He will likewise see that they be not delivered out, except to his orders, which will prevent abuses in the consumption.

As to the rest, you will find no difficulty respecting the conduct it is necessary you should adhere to, provided you conform to the common instructions which you have received in my dispatches. I have the honour to be, very truly,

*Gentlemen,*

Your very humble, and most obedient servant,

DE SARTINE.

To Messrs. Baron de Benyowsky,  
and M. Des Affizes.

Colonies. India Office. }

In form of Instruction re-  
lating to past and future  
Conduct. }

*Versailles, July 17th, 1775.*

**T**HE commander of the Postillion has brought me all your dispatches, from your arrival at the bay of Antongil until the 24th of last September. I have very minutely attended to the detail of your operations, during the first eight months; and I see, with satisfaction, that Government may conceive favourable hopes from your prospects, and your first proceedings with the inhabitants of Madagascar.

The success of this important enterprize, in effect, depends on the prudent and conciliatory means which you have continued to employ with the natives of the country. They are gentle, laborious, and disposed to trade, and associate with us; but the different attempts which have hitherto been made on the island, and which have either been attended with great violence to the natives, or expence to Government, puts you under the present necessity of continually multiplying your precautions, to prevent treachery, and every inimical enterprize, on the part of the Malgachee, who, like all uncivilized people, are jealous of their liberty. These islanders will be always disposed to be apprehensive of the consequences of a permanent establishment, if they be not treated with kindness, or if any humiliating distinction be made between

tween them and the Europeans. The temptation of a commerce, which is become agreeable and advantageous to them, may have seduced them at first; but it is to be feared, that they will become jealous of the advantages which the superiority of our knowledge and power must give us over them: you cannot, therefore, be too attentive to the manner in which you behave to them.

These considerations have always entered into the views of utility, which have determined the ministry to entrust you with the care of an enterprize, which may actually require considerable assistance; but his majesty has determined to reserve the communication of his intentions until the end of the year. In the mean time, I send the corvette, *La Sirene*, to bring you the first supplies of officers of health, workmen, money, provisions, and merchandize, as much as the tonnage of the vessel would admit. I confined myself, therefore, to the indispensable, until I can enter more fully into the subject, and comprehend all the parts of the service which an establishment of this nature requires; you will then receive recruits, which I have already ordered to be raised, with a greater quantity of provisions, and other articles requested in your dispatches, to which I shall more particularly apply in future.

His majesty, by his determination of fitting out the corvette, *La Sirene*, and approving that I should send you an almoner, two surgeons, with some soldiers and workmen, sufficiently apprizes you that his intention is, that you should continue to apply your whole attention to the establishment at Madagascar, and the preservation of his subjects, in order that you may be able to administer, with success, that assistance which shall be necessary, to such as still feel the effects of the intemperature of the climate, which has hitherto been so fatal to  
your

your people. I wait with great impatience for news concerning the return of this season ; and am continually apprehensive that the sickly time of the year has taken off the greatest part of your people, and forced you to abandon the bay of Antongil, and retire with your people to the place you distinguish by the name of the Plain of Health. I am persuaded, however, that you will make every effort to preserve, to the utmost of your power, all the posts you have established within the island, or upon the coast. Besides which, I invite you to continue firm and constant in your enterprize, notwithstanding the obstacles and inconveniences you have experienced which are always inseparable from an infant establishment. The more pressing your situation may become, the less I shall lose sight of you ; and you may depend upon my attention, and the dispositions of his majesty, with respect to you : he has authorized me to assure you of the same, and has charged me to exhort you to proceed with unabated zeal. His majesty, however, disapproves your having sent Madagascar slaves to the Cape of Good Hope. He recommends to you to be more circumspect in your operations, especially with respect to the colony of the isle of France, with which you ought to endeavour to trade, in preference to any other of his majesty's colonies, and more especially to a foreign colony ; so that all your dispositions should be subservient to the good of his majesty's service. I cannot too strongly recommend to you, to use the greatest œconomy in your expences, and to give M. Des Affizes every explanation which may be necessary to regulate those which preceded his arrival ; to leave entirely to him the administration of the finances, and the disposition of the ten thousand piaftres, which the corvette, La Sirene, will bring ; and, in a word, to conduct yourself towards him with that respect and delicacy,

which are necessary to maintain that good union and harmony, which are so essential to the welfare of his majesty's service.

I have the honour to be,

Very truly,

S I R,

Your most obedient servant,

DE SARTINE.

P. S. In the hand of his lordship.

I have received your letter of the 1st of November. When you shall have received the two surgeons I send you, you may return those to the isle of France who have been sent by Mr. Maillart, if you find that those who come from France are better informed in such matters as may be useful to you. I shall provide for the rest of your affairs without delay; but I cannot too strongly recommend to you, that your accounts be regularly kept; œconomy be attended to; and that you keep on good terms with the commissary. I do not say any thing with regard to the preservation of his majesty's subjects, as you cannot but be aware of its importance, and are more strongly interested in it than any one else.

*Versailles,*

Colonies. India Office. }

Relating to the Death of  
several Officers, and of  
Messrs. Marin, the fa-  
ther and son. }

*Versailles, July 23, 1775.*

S I R,

I Have received your letter of the 20th of September, 1774, in which I cannot, without the most sensible regret, observe the considerable loss you have suffered of your officers. The loss of your lieutenant-colonel, M. Marin, afflicts me more sensibly, as well on account of the reputation he had acquired in Canada, as because he might have contributed, together with yourself, to the success of the establishment at Madagascar. Though I am sensible of the necessity of speedily replacing this officer, I have not been desirous of precipitating my choice, because it is essential that he who is appointed to second and to share your labours, ought to possess the talents necessary to an employment of this importance. It will be the end of the year before I can send you a lieutenant-colonel; but I promise you before-hand, that I will use the utmost attention to send one who shall be capable of imitating the example of courage and firmness you will set him.

Your letter of the 18th of September 1774, in which you propose persons to the vacant employments, is likewise come to hand. I refer to the same time, the formation of a new corps of officers under you, in which, however, it will not be possible to comprehend all those whom you propose; not only because I have a great number of re-

formed officers, whom it will be just to employ in preference, but likewise because the advancement you propose for several of the volunteers, would be much too sudden. But I shall pay every respect to your proposals which circumstances and principles will allow.

I have the honour to be,

Very truly,

S I R,

Your very humble, and most obedient servant,

DE SARTINE.

*Versailles,*

Colonies. India Office. }  
N<sup>o</sup> 18. }

*Versailles, March 30, 1777.*

S I R,

I Received your letter of the 2d of June, 1776, N<sup>o</sup> 4, in answer to mine of the 17th of July, 1775. My fears lest you should be forced to abandon the bay of Antongil, are happily dissipated; and I see, on the contrary, that you have increased and extended additional posts, by making new conquests. Although success has hitherto always crowned your attempts, I should be much better satisfied to hear that you avail yourself of the means of mildness and persuasion, to subject the islanders: military exploits exhaust your troops, are expensive, and may some time be attended with unhappy consequences. I know, on the other hand, that you have not always had the power over events; but from the details contained in your letter, I see, with pleasure, that your warlike expeditions are at an end; and I have reason to believe that you will now employ yourself, solely, in the care of keeping the peace, and civilizing the people subject to your command. The principal object of your mission being agriculture and commerce, you must be sensible that you cannot make either flourish, but by the exertions of the natives. Now,  
in

in order to turn their attention to those objects, it is necessary that, by avoiding the trouble of war yourself, you present to them the view of greater advantages, to arise from a sure and lasting union, than from rendering each other slaves.

I have the honour to be,

Very truly,

S I R,

Your very humble, and most obedient servant,

DE SARTINE.

*Verfailles,*

Colonies. India Office. }

No. 19. }

*Versailles, March 30, 1777.*

S I R,

THE letters you wrote on the 10th and 24th of April, 1776, have arrived. Annexed to the former, I find the discourse which you pronounced at the assembly of officers of your corps; and to the second, the manifesto and declaration of war, which you have thought proper to publish against the

Your position at that period was most critical. I see that you had only a small body of troops to oppose to the multitude of your enemies; and I considered, with regret, that the supplies I had sent you by the *Sirenne*, had not then arrived. Though that vessel brought no recruits, yet the money on board, and my dispatches, would at least have dispelled your anxieties. The policy you have employed on this occasion, and the resolution you adopted to march out and meet the enemy, rather than wait for him in your lines, are very honourable, both to your prudence and your courage. I must particularly acknowledge the pleasure I received from the account of your march, and the plan of your campaign; also the still greater pleasure I received from hearing of the success of your operations.

I have the honour to be, very truly,

S I R,

Your very humble, and

Most obedient servant,

DE SARTINE.

To M. de Benyowsky.

No. 14.

Colonies.

Colonies. India Office }

No. 20. }

*Versailles, April 6, 1777.*

S I R,

I Learn with pleasure, from your letter of the 1st of January, 1776, that you have had the good fortune to escape the influence of the climate of Madagascar, and that your convalescence has placed you in a situation to give me a more ample account of your operations, than those which you have addressed to M. de Boines, by the Sieur Saunier.

His majesty being informed of the measures which you had taken to dissipate the league which threatened the Settlement at Louisbourg, appeared satisfied with the zeal you shewed on that occasion.

This confederacy shews that you have, perhaps, depended too much upon the pacific dispositions of several chiefs, whom you considered as the friends of Government. These chiefs, who do not behold without concern the exertions we make to form an establishment in their country, will, on their side, employ every manœvre to drive us thence. You ought, therefore, to be continually on your guard against their snares; to mistrust even those who appear to be the most sincerely devoted to you; and to maintain no post which you cannot defend against the sudden attacks you will be exposed to for a long time to come. The object of your mission, is not so much that of extending yourself in the island of Madagascar, as of maintaining your footing there. As soon as you shall be firmly established in the post, which you actually possess in the bay of Antongil, I hope that  
the

the neighbouring inhabitants, attracted at first by trade, will perceive the mildness of our laws, and will of themselves submit to a Government, whose superiority they will perceive, and of whose advantage they will be desirous.

These are the only means which his Majesty authorizes: every thing which tends to destruction, is repugnant to his benevolence; and he would rather wait for the voluntary submission of the Madagascar people, instead of owing it to his arms; and he does not approve of the wars you have to support, except so far as you may be able to justify them in his sight, by the necessity of a lawful defence. I exhort you, therefore, Sir, not to depart from these principles; and acquaint you, that I shall always receive much greater satisfaction from the news of a solid treaty of peace, than of brilliant conquest. The impatience you express respecting the supplies, which have been announced to you, is very natural; but the king, before he permits them to be forwarded to you, is desirous of being informed of the present state of the settlement, at the bay of Antongil; the certain advantages which may be derived therefrom; and more especially of the possibility of forming it without engaging in wars, or too evidently exposing the lives of his subjects. The inspection of Messrs. De Bellecombe and Chevreau is directed to this object; and I daily expect their observations that I may propose to his Majesty, either to support it in an effectual manner, or to abandon entirely the works you have made.

I do not conceal, that the disorders which prevail in the place where you are settled, and have carried off so many of your men, give me the greatest uneasiness; and I am not fully satisfied with what you have done to destroy them. The filling up of  
the

the marsh, is doubtless a very wise precaution; but the success is not infallible, and it may, at the utmost, serve to correct the influence of the climate in a slight degree, if the disorders depend on that cause. This is a point which remains to be cleared up, concerning which I have not yet received sufficient explanation; for though your losses have been less considerable during the latter years, this may perhaps arise not from the air of the bay of Antongil having become purer, but merely from its being less pernicious to men who are accustomed to it. Estimates should be made from those who newly arrive; and it is from them that the effects of your operations may be ascertained, by an exact calculation.

I see with pain, Sir, the contests you have had with the administration of the isle of France; and the King has expressed great displeasure on this head. They have not only injured the service of his Majesty, but have given rise to letters, on your part, which were not sufficiently weighed and considered. It is not from obscure reports that you ought to form a judgment of the sentiments of Messrs. Ternay and Maillart. If you had reason to complain of them, you were sure of finding me divested of all prejudice, and disposed to render you justice: besides which, your reasons, if well founded, would have lost none of their force for being urged with less bitterness; and you would have observed that politeness, which men in place mutually owe to each other, and which cannot be laid aside without giving just cause for reprehension. I have thought this observation necessary, in order that you may conduct yourself in future in a manner more conformable to my views; and that, by stifling every secret resentment in your breast, you may attach yourself to do and  
to

to write nothing but what may conciliate the affection of the administrators, with whom you correspond, and contribute to accomplish his Majesty's intentions, in the command he has been pleased to entrust to you.

I have the honour to be,

Very truly, &c.

DE SARTINE.

M. the Baron de Benyowsky.

India

India Office. }  
No. 21. }

(No date in M.S.)

S I R,

I Have received your letter of the 2d of June, 1776. The anxiety you express respecting his Majesty's Flute La Sirene, was unhappily too well founded. You must have since heard of the loss of that vessel; and what is still more distressing, of the greatest part of her people. With regard to the effects and money, which I forwarded to you by that conveyance, Mr. Maillart has been attentive to replace them; and Messrs. de Bellecombe and Chevreau must have brought a supply for the immediate wants of the settlement. I hope therefore, that the supplies you have received will enable you to proceed, until I can declare his Majesty's determination concerning your final operations, if they are intended to take place. The uncertainty which still remains in this respect, engages me to write only short answers; but when his Majesty shall have given me his final orders, if his intention be to continue the establishment at the bay of Antongil, I will then give you the most ample instructions concerning the conduct you ought to follow, with respect to the accounts, which make the principal object of your letter; and I will send you such people, as I am sensible you must be in want of, in order that this essential part of the service may not be neglected, but invariably kept with exactness and regularity. In the mean time, I recommend to you to keep accurate accounts of your expences; to look to the preservation of his Majesty's property, and not to permit any disposal of the same, without your consent;

sent ; in order that you may be enabled to give me reasons for the uses to which it shall have been applied, and that I may judge whether the œconomy I have ordered is punctually attended to.

I have received, together with your letter, the memoir you mention, concerning the fevers of the bay of Antongil ; but the ink you have made use of is so bad, that the writing is almost entirely obliterated, and cannot be made out ; I therefore beg you will send me another copy the first opportunity.

I have read with pleasure, the reflections you have presented to me, respecting the colony at Madagascar. I think with you, that the slave trade would be its ruin, and that all the views ought to be directed to trade and agriculture. I had already consigned these truths in the particular instructions of Messrs, de Bellecombe and Chevreau, so that you will not have any difficulty in bringing them to approve your principles, which do not differ from mine. I do not much differ from you with regard to the Europeans ; but this question will not be entirely resolved, until I can positively assure you that his Majesty intends to have a colony at Madagascar.

I have the honour to be, very truly,

S I R,

Your very humble, and most obedient servant,

DE SARTINE.

To M. the Baron de Benyowsky.

No. 15.

Immediately

\* \* \* Immediately after the correspondence there follows, in the MS. a copy of the ACT OF OATH, with the names of the chiefs present; and also a copy of the FULL POWERS. These agree with the same copies at pages 250 and 261 of this volume; excepting a few immaterial verbal variations, and the dates. The date of the Oath, in the last copy, is October 1, 1776; and of the Powers, October 3, 1781. Whether the difference between these and the dates in the Memoirs, be intentional, or founded in mistake, I shall not attempt to conjecture: it did not appear necessary to reprint them in this place.

DECLARA-

## D E C L A R A T I O N

O F T H E

## COUNT MAURICE DE BENYOWSKY.

**T**HE Count de Benyowsky, Magnate by birth of Hungary, who has the honour to present the annexed propositions to his Britannic Majesty, has been charged, on the part of his late Majesty Lewis XV. to form an establishment upon the island of Madagascar, in the year 1772, with orders to contract treaties of commerce and friendship with the natives of the country. He followed his mission for five years, and having accomplished it, he acquainted the Court of Versailles with his success; but the French ministry, being desirous of changing the treaties of commerce and friendship into an unlimited submission, on the part of the chiefs and people of the island, sent orders to the Count de Benyowsky to change the system agreed upon, and to establish an unlimited superiority, which could not be executed without infringing the primitive treaties concluded with the natives of the country: he thought proper, therefore, to forward his resignation to the Court, which immediately sent Messrs. Bellecombe and Chevreau, in quality of commissaries and inspectors for the King, to examine the conduct of Count de Benyowsky, who was found to be fully justified by the original instructions; and the commissaries of the King could not refuse him a justificatory act. As soon as he had obtained this, he gave up his charge of Commandant and Governor-General, by entirely renouncing

renouncing the service of France. The chiefs and people of Madagascar being informed of the mortifications the Count de Benyowsky had received, and being desirous of testifying their gratitude, assembled, and conferred upon him the charge of supreme Judge, and supreme Chief of the nation. Purnished with this title, he has obtained authority and power to treat in Europe, for the establishment of connections, either of trade, interest, or friendship, in order to accelerate the civilization of the inhabitants of Madagascar. With this charge, the Count de Benyowsky returned to Europe, where he experienced a violent persecution, on the part of the French ministry; to avoid which, he passed into the service of his Majesty, the Emperor, in hopes of obtaining from that Sovereign, the assistance he was in want of for Madagascar. But having soon received information, that the interests of his Imperial majesty were not calculated to accomplish his engagements, he regularly quitted that service; and, during two years, has employed himself in the execution of his charge. It is with this intention that he has the honour to present the annexed proposals to his Britannic Majesty. His good fortune will be complete, if he should succeed in interesting his Majesty, and shall obtain the assistance he is in need of, to accomplish the desires of an amiable and worthy nation, which has given him their unbounded confidence.

P R O P O S A L S

O F T H E

C O U N T M A U R I C E ,

T O T H E

M I N I S T R Y O F H I S B R I T A N N I C M A J E S T Y .

T O B E P R E S E N T E D A T L O N D O N , D E C E M B E R 2 5 , 1 7 8 3 .

**T**HE Count de Benyowsky, having obtained the powers and consent of the chiefs and people of Madagascar, who have confided to him the charge of supreme Chief of the nation, being convinced of the advantages which would result to the interest of his Britannic Majesty, the augmentation of the trade of his kingdoms, and the particular advantage of the civilization of the Madagascar people, in case a commercial interest were established between the subjects of his Britannic Majesty and the inhabitants of the island of Madagascar, PROPOSES, and submits unto his said Britannic Majesty, to cause him to be acknowledged Suzerain of that extensive and vast island; the interior civil and political government, and all the other regulations of civilization, high police, cultivation, and commerce, remaining independent. It is in this only quality of vassals to his Majesty, that the chiefs and people of Madagascar engage themselves:—

B b

To

## I.

To furnish his Majesty, in case of any war in India, with five thousand fighting men, led and commanded by their own officers; who shall be, in every respect, subject to the orders of the commander in chief of his Majesty's forces, during the whole time they shall be absent from the island, and employed against the enemies of his Majesty.

## II.

They oblige themselves likewise to victual the squadrons of his Majesty; and to furnish, if required, the contingent of two thousand seamen to serve on board his Majesty's ships in India.

## III.

They stipulate, that they will constantly import such European merchandizes only, as are of the product, or manufacture of England. The population of Madagascar amounting to three millions of souls, their consumption must necessarily augment the advantages of trade in favour of England.

## IV.

As an acknowledgment of their liege homage, the chiefs and people of the island of Madagascar, oblige themselves to pay annually a stipulated sum, to serve as an appanage to one of the Princes, sons of his majesty; but this acknowledgment cannot be paid until the fourth year after the signing of the treaty. In return for these

these advantages, the Count de Benyowsky demands, in the name of the united chiefs and people of Madagascar;—

1st. That his Majesty do grant, in case of a foreign invasion, supplies of arms, shipping, and warlike stores; the forces of Madagascar being, in other respects, sufficient to repel any enemy on shore.

2dly. That his Majesty do permit the free embarkation, in all his harbours, of such foreigners (the French excepted) as shall be desirous of passing to Madagascar, in order to dwell upon the said island. With regard to French subjects, they cannot be received, but with the consent of the representative of the nation.

3dly. That his Majesty do grant to the Count de Benyowsky, one vessel of four hundred and fifty tons; another of two hundred and fifty; and a third of one hundred and fifty tons; with cargoes and supplies of warlike stores, effects, and merchandizes, to the value of fifty thousand pounds sterling. The amount of this sum will be placed to the account of the island of Madagascar; and its Administration will pay the interest for the space of four years, and at the end of that term the capital sum shall be reimbursed to his Majesty. On these conditions the Count de Benyowsky offers to stipulate his submission, conformably to the articles herein before announced, on both sides; and it will depend only on the pleasure of his Majesty, to nominate and send one or more commissaries with the Count de Benyowsky to Madagascar, to conclude the definitive treaty.

Done at London, the year, month, and day,  
as herein before written.

After

\* \* \* After the copy of this instrument, the Count has written the following with his own hand, in French :

“NOTA. M. De Magellan, for his direction, will observe, that henceforth every idea of Suzerainety must be banished ; and that, in future, it will be proper to attend only to treaties of alliance, interest, and trade. It is with this sole view that we have configned to him the present registers.

“ Done at London, the 24th of March, 1784.

“ Signed,

MAURICE AUGUST. AMPANSACABE.”

F I N I S.

t  
n  
o  
-  
o  
f  
s  
-

1000

